

Thesis

Submitted in partial fulfillment of Ph.D. Degree
Doctoral program in Urban and Architectural Management and Valuation

Title

**The impact of open spaces in the social life; the case of Jeddah,
Saudi Arabia**

Author

Maher Mafoz A. Summan

Director of the thesis

Dr. Arc. Maria Pilar Garcia-Almirall

**Department of Architectural Technology (TA)
Universidad Politécnica de Cataluña, UPC**

Barcelona – España

SEPTEMBER 2019



Table of Contents

Table of Figures.....	7
Table of Tables.....	10
ABSTRACT	11
RESUMEN.....	12
Acknowledgments.....	13
CHAPTER ONE.....	17
AIMS & RESEARCH SCOPE.....	17
1.1 Introduction.....	17
1.2 The hypothesis.....	17
1.3 The research aims and objectives.....	17
1.4 Objectives specifications.....	18
1.5 The Context	18
1.6 Research methodology	20
CHAPTER TWO	27
CONTEXT OF THE RESEARCH LOCATION	27
2.1 Saudi Arabia.....	27
2.2 Jeddah	28
2.3 Growth and development	28
2.4 Demographics: structure	30
2.5 Demographics: growth.....	30
2.6 Immigration.....	31
2.7 Immigration challenges.....	33
2.8 Family and social life	35
2.9 Attitudes toward women	36
2.10 Planning Issues	37
2.11 Open spaces: Social attitudes.....	37
2.12 Saudi Arabia: Recreation and Leisure	40
2.12.1 Recreation and leisure.....	40
2.12.2 Leisure time growth	40
2.13 Saudi Arabia: leisure time usage	41
2.14 Recreation: demands by people.....	43
2.15 Summary	43
CHAPTER THREE	47
LITERATURE REVIEW	47
3.1- Introduction	47
Part One :Open Space Studies.....	48
3.2 Open public space	48
3.3 Open spaces and city form.....	49
3.4 Mental and Social Wellbeing and Open Spaces	50
3.5 Open spaces in the Middle East countries.....	53
3.5.1 Social and Cultural Uses of Space.....	53
3.5.2 Planning, Design and Maintenance	55
3.6 Gender, Age and Ethnicity of Open Space Users	58
3.6.1 Gender	58
3.6.2 Age	59
3.6.3 Ethnicity	60
Part Two: Social Life Studies.....	61
3.7 The Social Dimension	61
3.7.1 The Theoretical Antecedents of the Social Dimension of the Built Environment.....	61
3.7.2 Social production and construction of urban space.....	62

3.7.3 The concept of the public sphere.....	62
3.7.4 The influence of digital space on the role of public space in social interaction.....	63
3.7.5 The concept of social exclusion	63
3.7.6 Public spaces and neighborhoods as sites for social interaction.....	64
3.8 Person and Place relationships	65
3.9 Bonding and sense of place	65
3.10 Person, process and place dimensions.....	69
3.10.1 Person.....	69
3.10.2 Process	69
3.10.3 Place	70
3.11 Summary	70
CHAPTER FOUR.....	73
RESEARCH METHODOLOGY.....	73
4.1 Introduction.....	73
4.2 Methodological approaches.....	74
4.2.1 Investigating of open space as an integration of form, fabric and cultural practice.....	75
4.2.2 Adopting storytelling methods to elicit complexity of open spaces and social life.....	77
4.3 The Selection of the City of Jeddah	79
4.4 Overview and Integration of mixed methods	80
4.5 Identifying typology	83
4.6 Case study	84
4.7 Observation.....	86
4.8 Interviews.....	88
4.8.1 On-Site Interviews.....	89
4.8.2 Practitioners Interviews.....	91
4.8.3 Informed Interview Consent.....	91
4.9 Transcribing	91
4.10 Photographs	91
4.11 Studying The Role Of Government In The Planning, Design And Management Of Open Public Spaces.....	92
4.12 Sampling size	94
4.13 Data analysis	95
4.14 Reflection on methodology and cultural context	97
4.15 Summary	98
CHAPTER FIVE.....	101
MASTER PLANNING AND ITS RELATION TO THE CREATION OF OPEN SPACE IN JEDDAH CITY	101
5.1 Introduction.....	101
5.2 The Introduction of the Jeddah Master Plan.....	101
5.2.1 The Revival of the Historic Structure of the City and its Public Spaces	103
5.2.2 The Role of Street Network as Main Public Space	107
5.2.3 The Improvement of the Corniche Area as a Major Recreational Destination	111
5.2.4 Public Spaces Established Based on a Partnership between the Private Sector/Developers and the Public Sector	115
5.2.5 The Main Public Park in the City.....	120
5.3 The Creation of Public space within Residential Areas Located in Modern Neighborhoods	122
5.3.1 Regulations Related to Subdividing Lands and Constructing Buildings.....	122
5.3.2 Subdividing Lands Based on the Grid Street Layout.....	123
5.3.3 The Coverage of the Plot.....	124
5.3.4 The Development of Public Space in Residential Areas Based on Modern Architectural Principles	126
5.4 The Latest Initiatives Taken for Boosting the Quality of Public Space.....	128
5.4.1 Planning Standard In Connection with Subdividing Lands.....	128
5.4.2 Creation of Public Space Based on Design Guidelines.....	130

5.5 The Implementation of Public Space In Modern Neighborhoods In Jeddah City.....	132
5.6 The Features of Public Spaces in Modern Neighborhoods.....	134
5.7 Summary.....	137
CHAPTER SIX.....	141
PATTERN OF OPEN SPACES USE AND SOCIAL INTERACTION	141
6.1 Introduction.....	141
6.2 Al Basateen plaza	142
6.2.1 Social studies.....	143
6.3 Al Aqsan plaza	150
6.3.1 Social studies.....	153
6.3.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Aqsan plaza.....	160
6.4 Al Rowa plaza	161
6.4.1 Social studies.....	163
6.4.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Aqsan plaza.....	170
6.5 Umar bin Abdul-Aziz plaza	171
6.5.1 Social studies.....	172
6.5.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Basateen plaza.....	179
6.6 The historical area of Jeddah (Al-Balad).....	180
6.6.1 Al Balad plaza.....	185
6.7 Summary.....	206
CHAPTER SEVEN	207
DISCUSSION OF RESEARCH CONCLUSIONS	207
CHAPTER SEVEN	209
DISCUSSION OF RESEARCH CONCLUSIONS	209
7.1 Introduction.....	209
7.2 The Utilization of Public Open Spaces with Regard to Temporal, Spatial, and Identity Features.....	210
7.2.1 Systematic Arrangement of Public Open Spaces.....	210
7.2.2 Access to Public Open Spaces.....	210
7.2.3 Temporal Utilization of Public Spaces.....	213
7.2.4 The Perception of Landscape.....	214
7.2.5 Forms of Well-Being.....	216
7.2.6 Religious Rituals in Public Open Spaces.....	219
7.2.7 Gender-Related Values in the Saudi Culture and Public Spaces.....	220
7.2.8 Cohesion in Public Open Spaces at the Social Level.....	222
7.3 Social Communication and Integration	222
7.3.1 The Dimension of Each Person.....	224
7.3.2 The Dimension of Process.....	226
7.3.3 The Dimension of Place.....	228
7.4 The Ways of Planning, Designing, and Managing Open Spaces.....	229
7.4.1 Suggestions about Improving Open Spaces Schemes and Layouts.....	231
7.4.2 Suggestions to Develop the Design Features of Open Space.....	234
7.4.3 Suggestions to Upgrade the Management System of Open Space.....	238
7.4.4 Promotion of the Role Played by the Municipality of Jeddah With Regard to Designing Public Open Spaces.....	240
7.5 Summary.....	241
CHAPTER EIGHT	245
CONCLUSION	245
8.1 Introduction.....	245
8.2 How And Why People Use Designed Public Open Spaces In The Urban Context Of Jeddah City.	245
8.3 To explore what is the role of modern public spaces compared to traditional public spaces of Jeddah city in the formation of a platform for social interaction.....	247

8.4 implications for improved planning and design of public open spaces In line with government plans and actors in decision-making to meet the requirements of users within the Jeddah city context, thus contribute to bring back the social life to those spaces.....	247
8.4.1 Improving the Educational Agenda of Urban Design to Fully Realize Social Obligations	249
8.4.2 Affecting Policy and Strategic Decision-Making at the National and Local Levels	249
8.4.3 Developing the Quality and Potential of Open Space Studies Projects in Saudi Arabia and Middle Eastern Countries.....	249
8.5 Methodological Reflections and Directions for Future Research.....	250
REFERENCES.....	253
APPENDIXES	279
Questioner	281
Participants in the questioner	286

Table of Figures

Figure 1-1 Saudi Arabia & the geographical setting of Jeddah.....	19
Figure 2-1 Provinces in Saudi Arabia.....	27
Figure 2 - 2: The distribution of Jeddah population in residential neighborhoods: by nationality.....	32
Figure 4-1 Research methodology process.....	79
Figure 4-2 Location of Case Studies.....	84
Figure 4 - 3: Key elements in the observation adopted from (Zeisel, 1981).....	87
Figure 4 - 4: Observation periods.....	87
Figure 4-5 Map of the organizational structure of Jeddah Municipality (involved in public spaces).....	92
Figure 4-6 Government departments involved in public spaces.....	94
Figure 5-1 The Plan of the Old Structure of Jeddah, displaying the urban structure of the city and the interaction of the void and solid in architecture.....	104
Figure 5-2: Old Buildings in Jeddah in the Past.....	105
Figure 5- 3: Displaying Jeddah’s major market area during the 1920s.....	105
Figure 5-4: The establishment of a vital street network in Jeddah.....	110
Figure 5-5: The establishment of a vital street network in Jeddah.....	113
Figure 5-6: The picture reflecting the promotion of the public realm in the Corniche Area in Jeddah City.....	114
Figure 5-7: The picture displaying the outcome of improving open areas in Jeddah City which are near Al-Mahmal Shopping Centre and the Queen Building downtown.....	117
Figure 5-8: A photo displaying Al-Shallal Theme Park in Jeddah City.....	119
Figure 5-9: The photo above displaying Khuzam Palace Park in Jeddah City.....	121
Figure 5-10: The photo displaying the screening of the open area located around the free-standing buildings in Jeddah City. Utilizing these bars to provide privacy.....	125
Figure 5-11: A photo displaying a typical public space in Jeddah’s newly developed neighborhoods.....	128
Figure 6-1 Service area map.....	142
Figure 6-2 Movement and accessibility.....	142
Figure 6-3 Elements of the open space.....	142
Figure 6-4 Land uses of surrounding area.....	143
Figure 6-5.....	143
Figure 6-6.....	144
Figure 6-7.....	144
Figure 6-8.....	144
Figure 6-9.....	145
Figure 6-10.....	145
Figure 6-11.....	146
Figure 6-12.....	146
Figure 6-13.....	146
Figure 6-14.....	146
Figure 6-15.....	147
Figure 6-16.....	147
Figure 6-17.....	147
Figure 6-18.....	147
Figure 6-19.....	148
Figure 6-20.....	148
Figure 6-21.....	148
Figure 6-22.....	148
Figure 6-23 Service area map.....	150
Figure 6-24 Movement and accessibility.....	151
Figure 6-25 Elements of the open space.....	151
Figure 6-26 Land uses of surrounding area.....	152
Figure 6-27.....	153
Figure 6-28.....	153
Figure 6-29.....	154
Figure 6-30.....	155
Figure 6-31.....	156
Figure 6-32.....	156
Figure 6-33.....	157
Figure 6-34.....	157
Figure 6-35.....	157
Figure 6-36.....	157
Figure 6-37.....	158
Figure 6-38.....	158

Figure 6-39.....	158
Figure 6-40.....	158
Figure 6-41.....	159
Figure 6-42.....	159
Figure 6-43.....	159
Figure 6-44.....	159
Figure 6-45 Service area map.....	161
Figure 6-46 Movement and accessibility:.....	161
Figure 6-47 Elements of the open space.....	162
Figure 6-48 Land uses of surrounding area.....	162
Figure 6-49.....	163
Figure 6-50.....	164
Figure 6-51.....	164
Figure 6-52.....	165
Figure 6-53.....	165
Figure 6-54.....	166
Figure 6-55.....	167
Figure 6-56.....	167
Figure 6-57.....	167
Figure 6-58.....	167
Figure 6-59.....	168
Figure 6-60.....	168
Figure 6-61.....	168
Figure 6-62.....	168
Figure 6-64.....	169
Figure 6-65.....	169
Figure 6-66.....	169
Figure 6-67 Service area map.....	171
Figure 6-69 Movement and accessibility.....	171
Figure 6-70 Elements of the open space.....	171
Figure 6-71 Land uses of the surrounding.....	172
Figure 6-72.....	172
Figure 6-73.....	173
Figure 6-74.....	173
Figure 6-75.....	174
Figure 6-76.....	174
Figure 6-77.....	175
Figure 6-78.....	176
Figure 6-79.....	176
Figure 6-80.....	176
Figure 6-81.....	176
Figure 6-82.....	177
Figure 6-83.....	177
Figure 6-84.....	177
Figure 6-85.....	177
Figure 6-86.....	178
Figure 6-87.....	178
Figure 6-88.....	178
Figure 6-89.....	178
Figure 6-90.....	181
Figure 6-91.....	181
Figure 6-92.....	183
Figure 6-93.....	183
Figure 6-94.....	184
Figure 6-95.....	184
Figure 6-96.....	185
Figure 6-97.....	185
Figure 6-98 Building heights.....	186
Figure 6-99 Land use.....	186
Figure 6-100 Blocks and Space.....	187
Figure 6-101 Building condition.....	187
Figure 6-102 Wind movement.....	188
Figure 6-103.....	188
Figure 6-104.....	188

Figure 6-105.....	188
Figure 6-106.....	189
Figure 6-107.....	189
Figure 6-108.....	189
Figure 6-109.....	190
Figure 6-110.....	190
Figure 6-111.....	190
Figure 6-112.....	190
Figure 6-113.....	191
Figure 6-114.....	191
Figure 6-115.....	191
Figure 6-116.....	191
Figure 6-117.....	192
Figure 6-118.....	192
Figure 6-119.....	193
Figure 6-120.....	195
Figure 6-121.....	197
Figure 6-122.....	199
Figure 6-123 <i>The distribution pattern</i>	201
Figure 6-124.....	202
Figure 6-125.....	202
Figure 6-126.....	202
Figure 6-127.....	202
Figure 6-128.....	203
Figure 6-129.....	203
Figure 6-130.....	203
Figure 6-131.....	203
Figure 6-132.....	204
Figure 6-133.....	204
Figure 6-134.....	204
Figure 6-135.....	204

Table of Tables

<i>Table 4-2 introduces the objectives and aims that are addressed by the use of each data collection method. The following sections will present and give more details about each method that was used to collect data.</i>	82
Table 4-3 Summary of the methods for identifying typology	83
Table 4-4 Summary of the methods for open spaces observation	86
Table 4-5 Summary of the methods for open spaces user’s interviews	89
Table 4-6 Summary of the methods for practitioner’s interviews	89
Table 4 - 8: Extensive landscape sites sampling size details	96
Table 4 - 9: Intensive landscape sites sampling size details	97
<i>Table 6-1 Table of the open space contents</i>	142
<i>Table 9 Table of the open space contents</i>	150
<i>Table 6-2 Table of the open space contents</i>	161
<i>Table 6-68 Table of the open space contents</i>	171

ABSTRACT

This study discusses social life in public open spaces within an urban context of Jeddah city, by examining the quality and design of these spaces.

Jeddah is a multicultural city, with a high proportion of immigrant people, so also provides a research context for critiquing transnational practices and social interaction. The study strategy was developed from two key methodological principles. The first develops investigation of open space as an integration of form, fabric and cultural practice, allowing the study to link social patterns with the physical design of the public realm. The second foregrounds storytelling methods to elicit complexity of social interaction, enabling investigation of intangible influences, such as social norms, gender norms, religion and ethnicity. A qualitative case study approach was used to investigate users' cultural practices and experiences of public spaces. The methods used in this study were a review of documents and maps, car surveys, observations and on-site interviews. It was fundamental to develop an open space typology to meet the diversity of use in a case study selection specific to a Gulf region context.

The present study has the potential to make an important contribution to academic research on the value and roles of open space in social life and interaction. The focus on Saudi Arabian open spaces is rare, and contributes to address the Western and North European bias in academic literature. The practical implications of the study are also important, as it highlights the necessity to develop open spaces design, planning, and management in order to better meet residents' social needs. However, despite the numerous weaknesses of the open space provision in Jeddah, the study confirms the potential of creation of strong social relations between the residents of Jeddah when they are provided public spaces that attract them and meet their needs and expectations.

RESUMEN

Este estudio discute la vida social en espacios públicos abiertos dentro de un contexto urbano de la ciudad de Jiddah, examinando la calidad y el diseño de estos espacios.

Jiddah es una ciudad multicultural, con una alta proporción de inmigrantes, por lo que también proporciona un contexto de investigación para criticar las prácticas transnacionales y la interacción social. La estrategia de estudio se desarrolló a partir de dos principios metodológicos clave. El primero desarrolla la investigación del espacio abierto como una integración de la forma, el tejido y la práctica cultural, permitiendo que el estudio vincule patrones sociales con el diseño físico del ámbito público. El segundo pone en primer plano los métodos de narración de cuentos para provocar la complejidad de la interacción social, permitiendo la investigación de influencias intangibles, como las normas sociales, las normas de género, la religión y la etnicidad. Se utilizó un enfoque de estudio de caso cualitativo para investigar las prácticas culturales de los usuarios y las experiencias de los espacios públicos. Los métodos utilizados en este estudio fueron una revisión de documentos y mapas, encuestas de coches, observaciones y entrevistas en el sitio. Era fundamental desarrollar una tipología de espacio abierto para cumplir con la diversidad de uso en una selección de estudio de caso específica para un contexto de la región del Golfo.

El presente estudio tiene el potencial de hacer una contribución importante a la investigación académica sobre el valor y los roles del espacio abierto en la vida social y la interacción. El enfoque en los espacios abiertos de Arabia Saudita es raro, y contribuye a abordar el sesgo occidental y del norte de Europa en la literatura académica. Las implicaciones prácticas del estudio también son importantes, ya que resalta la necesidad de desarrollar el diseño, la planificación y la gestión de espacios abiertos para satisfacer mejor las necesidades sociales de los residentes. Sin embargo, a pesar de las numerosas debilidades de la provisión de espacios abiertos en Jiddah, el estudio confirma el potencial de la creación de fuertes relaciones sociales entre los residentes de Jiddah cuando se les proporciona espacios públicos que los atraen y satisfacen sus necesidades y expectativas.

Acknowledgments

Firstly, I would like to express my sincere gratitude to my Directora of Study Dr. Maria Pilar Garcia Almir for the continuous support during my PhD journey, I would like to thank her for her patience, motivation, and the provided knowledge in my field. Her guidance helped me in all the time of research and writing of this thesis. I could not have imagined having a better supervisor and mentor for my PhD journey.

In addition, I would like to thank my examiners, profesor Walliser, professor Wael Hussein Youssef, and Dr. Nawaf Alhajaj for the brilliant comments and amendments that enhanced the final draft of my PhD thesis. A special thanks to all the members of the CPSV-UPC department, especially Rolando Biere.

I would like to thank my family; words cannot express how grateful I am to my mother Amenah and my father Mahfoz for all of the sacrifices and prayers that you have made on my behalf. My brothers (Ahmed, and Bander) and my only sister (Afnan) for supporting me spiritually throughout writing this thesis and my life in general. My friends who supported me during my PhD journey.

Moreover, the enormous gratitude is due to my beloved wife Areej for the unlimited encouragement and for taking care of our amazing sons (Soltan, and Salman) and our daughter (Sara).

Finally, I would like to thank the Ministry of Education in Saudi Arabia, the Saudi Arabia Cultural Bureau in Madrid, King Abdulaziz University, and all the staff in the Faculty of Environmental Designs for all the support that made my big achievement become possible.

CHAPTER ONE

AIMS & RESEARCH SCOPE

CHAPTER ONE

AIMS & RESEARCH SCOPE

1.1 Introduction

This research reads the convenience of users in the public open spaces, and the reflection of that in their desire to interact with each other within the public open spaces. It explores the influence of the government role in creating the master plan of Jeddah city, thus how to produce and manage public spaces. It also investigates how elements, design, accessibility, conditions surrounding the open spaces Impacts in the social life in these spaces within Jeddah city in Saudi Arabia. The research examines Saudi and non-Saudi people and their reasons and motives of using public open spaces for females and males, and in groups and individuals, in addition to the incentives for people to create a social life through public open spaces by observations and interview with users at the selected open spaces. Moreover, the analysis of the results contributes to discuss the perceptions and values of the quality of the open spaces Jeddah city through the presentation of users' responses, experience and knowledge of the researcher as an urban designer.

1.2 The hypothesis

This study examines how modern public spaces within residential neighborhoods have deteriorated as a result of poor design, government administration, and inadequate private sector intervention in providing activities that will improve the efficiency of modern public spaces and enhance their social role.

1.3 The research aims and objectives

The aims of this study are as follows:

1. Research Aims To explore how and why people use designed public open spaces in the urban context of Jeddah city.
2. Research Aims To explore what is the role of modern public spaces compared to traditional public spaces of Jeddah city in the formation of a platform for social interaction.
3. Research Aims To determine some of the implications for improved planning and design of public open spaces In line with governmental plans and actors in decision-making to meet the requirements of users within the context of Jeddah city, thus contribute to bring back the social life to those spaces.

1.4 Objectives specifications

In order to gain a better understanding of the social life and how users interact in open spaces within the context of Jeddah, it is fundamental to identify what factors influence these. Social interaction will be associated with the designed spaces across the city. In addition to the traditions and cultures of Jeddah, and the significant number of immigrant workers from other cultures and countries associated with demographic factors that play a critical role in understanding of social interactions and meanings applied to certain open spaces. To achieve these aims of the study the following objectives need to be understood:

- a) Identifying typologies of the urban open spaces that are popularly used by people.
- b) Observation of activities and use across demographic factors at different times, and on different days of the year in selected case study sites.
- c) Investigation of the ways that people develop their interactions and relationships with each other, and define the activities and uses that are attractive and generates social relations in modern public spaces and traditional public spaces.
- d) Critique current situation of professional practice relating to planning, designing and governmental administration of public open spaces in Saudi Arabia, especially in Jeddah, with specific focus on social requirements.
- e) Clarify implications for the urban design profession, working on the planning, designing and governmental administration of open spaces in Saudi Arabia.

1.5 The Context

Saudi Arabia is usually misunderstood in many respects. In natural terms, the country has dry seasonal valleys, where there is beaches, high mountains and magnificent oases (Figure1-1). Entertainment in urban areas has great importance to the people, therefore the country has many shops, restaurants and cafes in its cities, with a range of cultural activities and nightlife. The main cities in Saudi Arabia, such as Riyadh, Jeddah, Dammam, Mecca, and Medina have many conveniences and these are usually of a high level.

In the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, some aspects of public provision are neglected. The research presents that in all of the evolution indicators for Saudi Arabia, there is an insufficiency of environmental planning and policy for open spaces in Saudi Arabia. The quality of open spaces

system could be a direct solution to the environmental, Health, and social problems. In addition to being involved in the improvement of educational and economic life of the community. Creating more open spaces with high quality would provide opportunities for more interaction between people , as well as increasing the social coexistence between society classes. The creation of these open spaces planned and designed in accordance with users' needs will offer great places to use, and to make healthy social relationships.

Figure 1-1 Saudi Arabia & the geographical setting of Jeddah



Source: Municipality of Jeddah

In Arab countries and Saudi cities, it is necessary to develop approaches to open spaces designing and planning, and should take into account key areas of difference with Western countries. Most studies regarding people's responses to open spaces are based on Western culture, and mostly European and North American based.

Jeddah has a total population of around 3.5 million, and it is expected to be over 5 million by 2029. The total population is currently made up of 52% Saudi nationals and 48% non-Saudi nationals¹. These numbers shows the city's needs of high quality open spaces to meet the different needs of the variety users, which is a difficult challenge for decision-makers and those responsible for city planning and designing of open spaces.

Ignoring the needs and desires of the people in the design of public spaces as well as the existence of non-specialists in decision-making positions leading to the futility of open spaces. Although there are many open spaces in the city, poor planning which caused the difficulty of using the open spaces, thus losing their urban and social role.

¹ Department of Statistics and Information in Saudi Arabia.

Poor planning and distribution of open space are current problems facing the city of Jeddah. Although there are many open spaces in the city, a large proportion of these spaces are poor in design and difficult to use. However, there are also examples of distinctive design and quality, but the proportion of these spaces, when compared to the area of the city, is very limited.

Especially, neighborhoods have no planned or designed open spaces, and there are many leftover plots², but the city has a variety of public parks and open spaces in recreational areas. The Municipality of Jeddah has added children's playgrounds in these areas, and made provision for some activities such as children's playgrounds, and public services such as kiosks and other facilities. However, this kind of open spaces, can only be seen in regional recreational areas such as the Waterfront or regional parks, but people want and need to use open spaces which are close to their houses and interact with them daily. In other words, they need open spaces of high quality, and activities in residential neighborhoods.

As a regular use of open spaces in Jeddah, there are a variety of seasonal festivities that people can interact with public open spaces, such as the National Day, Eid, Ramadan³, and many other public festivals. The most important celebration for Arab and Muslim people is Ramadan⁴, especially as holidays for most of the Islamic countries, bonding to old customs and traditions, through experience them at open spaces, such as traditional games, cultural activities, and traditional foods.

Much of the green space that is associated with leisure and social benefits research is based upon European and North American contexts, and there is a pressing need for research to address the Saudi Arabian and Middle Eastern context. This is because there are many factors, such as rapid urban expansion, the involvement of Western landscape architecture firms and the growth of the landscape profession. This research is currently one of the few studies of open spaces in Jeddah, which will fill an existing gap in the knowledge base for landscape architecture and planning of public open spaces, as this issue has not been recognized as being sufficiently important.

1.6 Research methodology

The research is based on two types of methods, on the first hand, the theoretical analysis through the reference bibliography about urban open space and the critical analysis of urban practices in the city of Jeddah. On the other hand, empirical analysis of reality through two techniques: participant observation of the uses of urban space, and interviews with users.

As Thomas (2003) describes inductive methodology as a systematic to analyze qualitative data where specific objectives lead the process, and users of open spaces behavior will be analyzed to

² Lands have no planned use.

³ Festival of Breaking the Fast

⁴ Is the ninth month of the Islamic calendar, and is observed by Muslims worldwide as a month of fasting

reveal what factors and elements of design influence in the role of public spaces in social life in Jeddah.

The force of qualitative research is that it can form complex textual explains how people interact and behave with each other in open spaces in Jeddah. According to Gorman & Clayton (2005), qualitative research can be defined as the process related to inquiry in which data is drawn from the context of their occurrence, so that occurrences can be described. The Interpretation of events are identified by user's experience, and his perceptions, and the analysis of the results by the researcher.

The methods used in the research must lead to the objectives of the study and help to meet the aims of this work. Innovative means has developed by the researcher to collect data that are acceptable for the case of Saudi Arabia. Because of limitations of current data for open spaces In Saudi Arabia in general and in Jeddah in particular, were required effective recording techniques. The methodology studies practices regarding to demographic values, and connects the data from social research into the practice of urban design, and open spaces in the city of Jeddah. The observations of various open spaces that are used by the people will lead to identify the most favorite places for public use. The point is to select case studies from different locations in Jeddah to study, analysis, and procedure interviews, the demographic profile (age, nationality, gender) of space users reflected by the sampling.

The results from observations and interviews gained were applied to mark understanding of the relationship between the design of open spaces in Jeddah and the strengthening of relations between users, so that recommendations can be made to improve the quality of public open spaces to motivate users to interact with each other. It is expected that the recommendations and findings from this study could help the decision-makers in the field of planning and urban design in Jeddah to meet the importance of open spaces in peoples' life, in addition to suggest other line for research into improving the social life through the design of open spaces.

Understanding the concept of urban design has helped the researcher to accommodate the emotional bond between the user and open spaces, thus its relation to design and planning to meet the needs of users of public open spaces, which drives people to interact with each other in these spaces, and forming a healthy social life, as the literature review of the subject and the findings of the research study should contribute to elevate the understanding of the importance of the impact of quality of public space design on the social life of the people.

1.7 The Structure of the Thesis

Chapter One introduces the fundamental concept and theme of the research. Also this chapter indicates the gap in knowledge with regard to the open spaces in Jeddah and its role in the social life of the users.

Chapter Two introduces the geographical context of this research. This chapter argues the current recreational use of public open spaces in Saudi Arabia. Also introduces how everyday life in Saudi Arabia influences on the use of public open spaces in terms of climate, demography and urban growth policies that are used in the city of Jeddah. It also gives a focus on daily life and the state of open shared activities that must present to the reader the traditions and culture of the people in the city of Jeddah, in addition to providing an idea of the city structure.

Chapter Three introduces the literature review, which identifies and detects key theoretical contexts to the subject of this study. the study depends on research in many disciplines that evaluating urban spaces, and social life in open spaces, which have previously admitted the value of senses related with specific spaces by users.

Chapter Four explains the methods that used in the research. It defines data collection and survey methods as a long as a review of the experimental study and the fieldwork that happened in Jeddah. It also includes case study briefs of the selected sites, observations, and interviews structure that apply to each open space. It identifies the framework of sampling size⁵ according to participants' different nationality, age and gender.

Chapter Five introduces how the advent of the Jeddah master plan sparked questions about the compatibility of technically-generated open spaces with their users and context. It also focuses on the development process of public space within modern residential areas in Saudi cities. Finally, this chapter highlights the recent initiatives by the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs to improve public space provision and the quality of residential areas.

Chapter Six introduces the research findings. It is founded on the observations of open spaces, reviews documents and maps, and car surveys of Jeddah. It introduces each of the selected open spaces used in the study in detail, and propped on information, maps, photos, illustrations of each open space, It also analyzes human behavior, and social interaction in every space at different times and connects it to the space design.

Chapter Seven discusses the findings of the research. It also discusses and presents the main findings from the last two chapters. According to the findings, this chapter explores the core of the research aims. It connects the literature review to the findings, suggesting how the findings can be used to develop the public open spaces in Jeddah to provide the desires and needs of users. This chapter presents the main findings in relation to using patterns of open spaces, the main findings regarding to the design and planning of public open spaces and social life.

⁵ Number of people participating in the questionnaire

Chapter Eight is the research conclusion. It refers to the limitations and contributions of the research. It also contains a summary, ideas and suggestions for more research in the future.

CHAPTER TWO

CONTEXT OF THE RESEARCH LOCATION

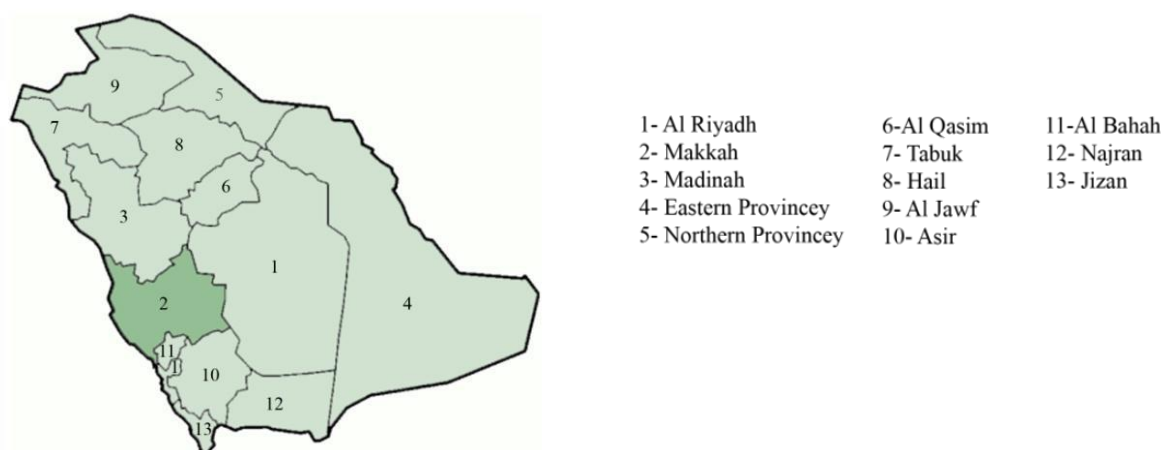
CHAPTER TWO

CONTEXT OF THE RESEARCH LOCATION

2.1 Saudi Arabia

Saudi Arabia was in around one hundred years ago an isolated desert country with the port of Jeddah and some settlements around the city of Riyadh⁶ were the originally small commercial centers. Since that time, Saudi has quickly transformed from an agriculture-based economy underdeveloped country to a developed state with an oil-based economy which has involved to its cities having high levels of development and urbanization with sophisticated infrastructure. The country is considered to have the world's biggest oil reserves; also it is the world's biggest oil exporter.

Figure 2-1 Provinces in Saudi Arabia



Source: Municipality of Jeddah

Saudi Arabia is the third biggest country within the region of the Middle East, with area of 2,149,690 square kilometer (Figure 2-1). The Red Sea located at the west and at the east located the Arabian Gulf, and according to Central Department of Statistics and Information in 2016, the population of Saudi Arabia is around 31.015.999, and the number of non-Saudi people estimated to be 11 million.

The people of the country still demonstrated the Arab tribal culture, especially in terms of cultural and social aspects, so that shows the Saudi Arabia as a conservative country. Wherefore, behavior and Garments are affected strictly by social principles, but the progress of change and evolution are not completely resisted. The opinions about political and social issues are not expressed easily, in

⁶ The capital of Saudi Arabia and situated in the center of the Arabian Peninsula

additional to the Lack of political parties and organized labor unions to give people public meetings for social awareness.

Society in the country is completely based on Islamic principles in all life's aspects, Attitudes towards women roles in Saudi society are diverse. Saudi Arabia has supported woman role in the society, such as employed as researchers, consultants, doctors, teachers, and engineers. Rights of women was approved by King Abdullah and the Consultative Council in 2013⁷, although the opposition of the conservative people in Saudi Arabia that refuse the participation and work of women in the Saudi community.

There are a large number of immigrants, especially low-skilled Asian workers, who usually undertake manual jobs that Saudi youths do not prefer to do. These workers spend a lot of time working in difficult climatic conditions, they also earn low wages, which leads them to live in slums, and resort to forming their own communities with their ilk.

The country commonly has a desert climate, but at the south west of Saudi Arabia, the temperatures are around 36°C during summer, autumn, and spring, and around 17°C during winter. Across the country, temperatures at night are low. Nevertheless, in the north of the frontier with Yemen to the south west of the country the climatic conditions are mild temperatures accompanied by humidity because of the influence of monsoons from the Indian Ocean. Plant life includes small herbs and shrubs need small amounts of water, due to the desert climate of the country, however the south west of Saudi Arabia has areas covered with grass and trees. Wild life includes animals such as sand rats, hyenas and wolves, also it contains some wild birds like eagles, falcons, and hawks.

2.2 Jeddah

Jeddah is located on the coast of the Red Sea and is the major urban center at the west of Saudi Arabia (Figure2-1). It is the biggest city in Mecca Province, it also the largest sea port on the Red Sea, and the second biggest city in Saudi Arabia after Riyadh “the capital city”. Jeddah city is an important commercial hub in Saudi Arabia, divided to 13 Sub Municipalities. The built up area of Jeddah reached in 2018 to 1.600 sq.km and population estimated to be 3.5 million. The goal of this section is to understand how much Jeddah has transformed and how much it has improved.

2.3 Growth and development

The city became inhabited about 2,500 years ago and has long been a point of sailors and traders. Jeddah established as a port for Muslim pilgrims travelling to the Holy Cities of Medina and Mecca in

⁷ A group of advisors appointed by the King of Saudi Arabia

1250, as well as a port for spice trading. This declaration of the city was a turning point in Jeddah's future. Not only were there increased possibilities for business, also the arrival of pilgrims from all over the world, and continue to live in the city, created the beginnings of an international city.

The Ottoman Empire⁸ conquered Jeddah and built a stone wall around the city in 1500, that was during their extension into the Middle East. The wall was built to protect the city from Portuguese attacks, which helps to protect the city until 1866. The demolition of the wall was in 1947, the population grew by an average of 9.5% each year between 1947 and 1987, This rapid growth in population was due to increased immigration to the city.

Economically the country is built on the export of oil in the first place, then on industry and agriculture such as dates, fruits and vegetables. In addition to relying on religious tourism during the months of Hajj and Umrah. In the last four decades, the enormous increase in the Saudi Arabia's wealth caused an urban extension and rapid growth of the population in the major cities in the kingdom, such as Jeddah. This extension and growth came without strategic or consideration of planning regulations. This random growth led to an overtake in the absorptive capacity of the infrastructure of the city. also the emergence of slum neighborhoods, big numbers of unplanned land spaces, and using more private car.

According to what has been mentioned before, over many years after the destruction of the City Wall in the year 1947, there was wide-scale serious destruction in Jeddah city. The authorities of municipal developed and put into action very important physical planning schemes for the purpose of completely changing the shape and form of the city. The establishment of two main roads "Mecca and Medina roads" resulted in the establishment of residential areas with remarkably high income along both highways towards the end of the 1940s. Additionally, the urban planners perceived Al-Sabeel 37 District, which is located in the southeast of the town, as a region for hosting immigrants receiving a low income. Accordingly, the basic social characteristics of the city were nearly totally planned in detail. Based on this plan, families achieving 'high income' settle in the north and east of the city, whereas families achieving 'low income' settle in the south of the city. The following phases of urban development seemed to echo this social geography model (Fadan 1977; Bokhari 1978; Daghistani 1991).

⁸ It was a state that controlled much of Southeast Europe, Western Asia and North Africa between the 14th and early 20th centuries.

2.4 Demographics: structure

Saudi Arabia has high percentage of population (39.92%) of people aged 15 years and younger, This pattern of a big youth population of the Saudi has remained broadly similar since the National Census of 1974⁹ (CDS 1992; 2004; 2007).

As well as many immigrants form the population structure of Jeddah from other countries (Figure 2-2). In 2002 Jeddah Municipality informed that the city had an older population in comparison with other Saudi Arabian cities because of the big number of mainly middle-aged immigrants. Therefore, the male population of Jeddah has historically risen faster than for females (Mandeli, 2011); but these population differences have never been fundamental, duo to the immigrant families join them at a later.

2.5 Demographics: growth

Between 1932 and 2014 the population of the city has grown more than 115 times. The city's concentration of power, with a gathering of wealth has attracted many new people to Jeddah, and the increasing the city population. The national census has showed that the city's population has changed from 3 million in 2007 to 4 million in 2014 (CDS 2004; 2010).

The strategic coastal location of the city, as well as the being entry point for pilgrims, formed the city as a major diplomatic center, as well as a trading center selected by the country's political and business people. The city has characteristics similar to other cities in the country, which includes rapid growth, a high percentage of young people, and substantial migration. Oil revenues have contributed to the country's economic prosperity, which made the country one of the rapidest developed countries in the world, that has been associated to the urbanization of Saudi Arabia.

"Fakeeh (2009)" sees that because of the global financial crisis, financial markets of many countries greatly reduced, but because of the surplus money and raise of government spending, the influence of that crisis was limited. By these factors as well, although the Iraq war¹⁰ has broken the economic evolution, financial situation of the country was not affected.

As Behrendt, Hag et al. (2009) says, Jeddah is the largest commercial and business center in this part of Saudi Arabia with effective services and infrastructure developed with significant public and private investments. Developing job opportunities have increased the number of migrant workers that has provided Jeddah with further economic benefits.

⁹ Saudi Population Issued by the National Center for Statistics and Information

¹⁰ The Iraq War was a protracted armed conflict that began in 2003 with the invasion of Iraq by a United States-led coalition that overthrew the government of Saddam Hussein.

According to the Central Department of Statistics and Information the current level of unemployment all over Saudi Arabia is around 11.7%. The International Monetary Fund explains that during the last four years compared to 500,000 Saudis gaining new jobs, immigrants were employed in 1.5 million new jobs, thus, the possibility of employment for some groups of Saudis is easier, such as those under the age of 50 (30%) and females (35%) (IMF, 2013)¹¹.

2.6 Immigration

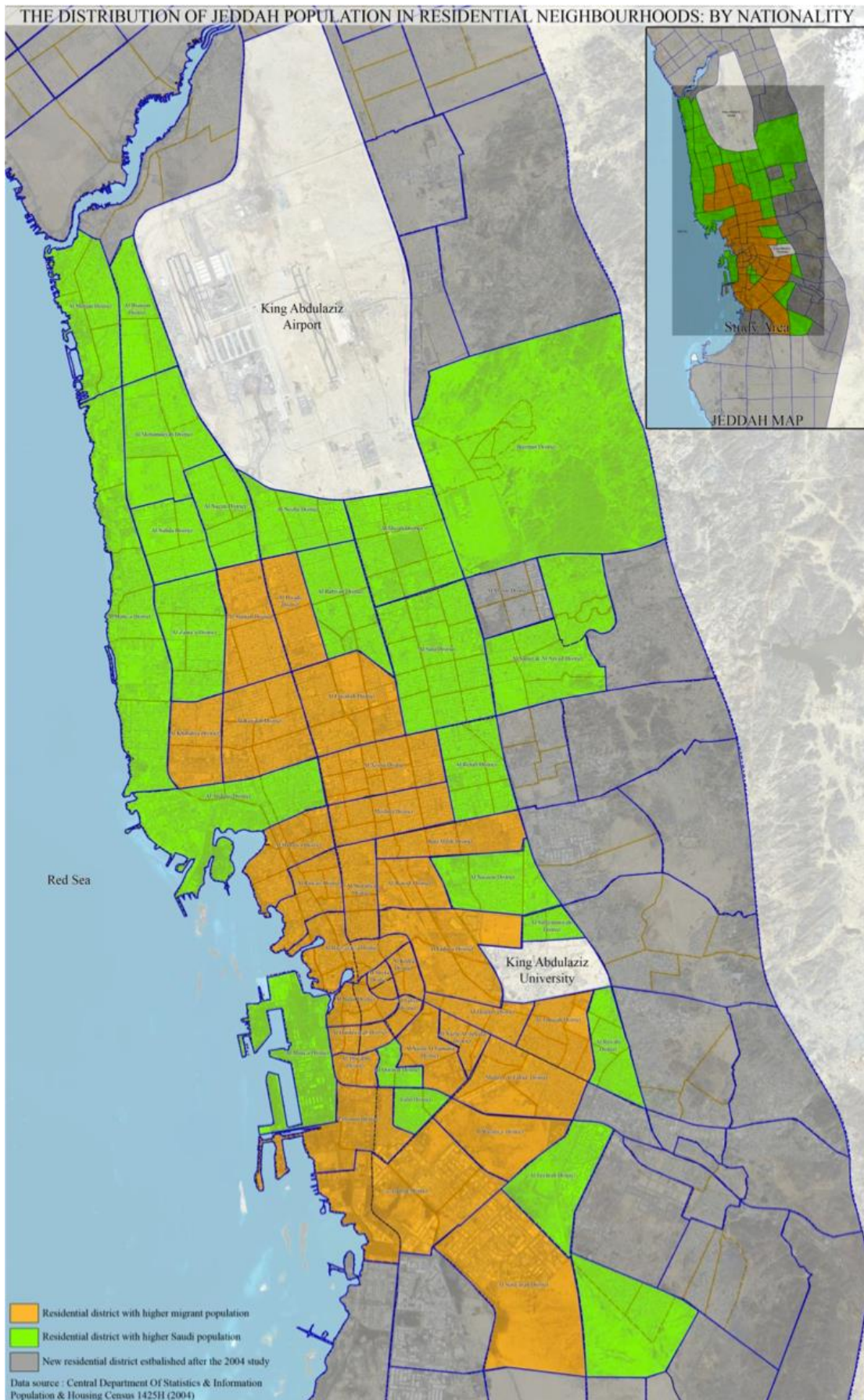
According to a report by Jeddah Municipality (2004), between 1971 and 1974, foreign workers increased to become around 37% of the population of the city. This percentage of migrant workers remained broadly similar and in 2002 this had decreased slightly to around 30%. The number of Saudi citizens in Jeddah population total increased rapidly from 47.7% in 1978 to 70.6% in 2002 (Jeddah-Municipality 2004). However, the percentage of internal immigration declined and the numbers of foreign workers increased over the period from 1978 to 2002 (Mandeli, 2011), most of them are Arabs and from Middle East countries, as well as those from the Philippines, India, Pakistan and Indonesia.

Immigrants workers were able to provide skills and expertise that Saudi youth were not able to offer since the economic changes of the 1970s, thus the immigrants number continued to increase, which was mostly due to heavy reliance on their work that was important for Saudi economic development. Statistics from the General Census of Population and Housing for the year 2017 reveal that the total number of international immigrants increased from 0.7 to 1.73 million between 2010 and 2017, with 11.9% annual rate of growth. During the same period, their proportion to the total population also increased from 29.4% to 50% (CDS 2004; 2017).

Immigrants of Saudi Arabia mostly are from Lebanon, Pakistan, Sudan, Egypt, Philippines, Indonesia, India and other developing countries, as well as from Western countries, such as the UK and the USA. The national background often plays a significant role in the distribution of immigrants, and especially low-skilled workers. Immigrants representing different nationalities may be found living together in a particular area, which is similar for highly skilled professionals from western countries that are often isolated within gated communities (Mandeli, 2011).

¹¹ International Monetary Fund

Figure 2 - 2: The distribution of Jeddah population in residential neighborhoods: by nationality



Source: Municipality of Jeddah

2.7 Immigration challenges

According to (Mandeli, 2011), some immigrants attempt to maintain their cultural identity by opening clothing stalls, food shops and restaurants that cater for their special needs. This can be seen as a treatment for uprooting them from their roots and trying to form a similar social life, practicing their habits and behaviors from their original life. Nevertheless, the immigrants cannot be depicted as incorporating within the society, because of the different of languages, origins and ethno-national, and tribes. Huo states that immigrants play a critical role in shaping the city's planning and landscape as they create new cultures within neighborhoods and within the city urban context (Huo, 2013).

Population structure of Jeddah has a built on many different nationalities, such as many immigrants workers moved to the city for opportunities of employment. Although there has been a leniency and traditional acceptance of immigrants working and living in Jeddah, (Mandeli, 2011) says over recent years, a perception has developed by some residents that there are too many foreign migrant workers, which has exposed increased feelings of uncertainty, anxiety and insecurity. Saudis fears of immigrants in the economic, social, cultural, and security aspects, especially of unemployed immigrants.

The immigrant workers have brought with them from their home cultures new customs, traditions, skills, practices and ideas, which changed the cultural and social content of Jeddah city. Immigrant workers from Middle East and Arab countries, and also those from Pakistan, India, Philippines and Indonesia, flay to Saudi Arabia for work opportunities that often not exist in their original country, or to improve their social and economic life. This has contributed to produce an active culture and cosmopolitan urban life.

People living in Jeddah have different ethnic origins, which have helped to forming the attitudes and behavior of the residents of the city, so that different forms of exclusion are presented against immigrants, such as discrimination, segregation, avoidance and unwillingness to communicate, through public policy, and access restrictions. However, Islamic norms have reduced visible discrimination among the people of the city, but still there are some social exclusion and anti-immigrant attitudes. In addition, Saudi citizens have been concerned about different nationalities and regional identities, as well as the emergence of perception of potential threats because of the numbers of international immigrants. Therefore, many workers immigrants come to Saudi Arabia to gain money and fulfill workforce needs in the country, but they are often socialize with people from the same country and cultural background (Mandeli, 2011).

Saudis' desires to take off the source of competition and threat appear in negative attitudes towards immigrant workers, and the consequent racial discrimination. (Yamni 2000). Berry (2008) suggests that attitudes towards foreigners can differ, according to the status of the incomers, such as whether

they are asylum seekers or refugees, as well as others who are foreign migrant workers in Jeddah. According to person character, differ attitudes towards immigrants , as well as their social and religious inclinations.

(Al-Gabbani, Alhusein, 2005) confirms that there is a change of attitudes of residents towards immigrant because of the acceptance of immigrant in the labor market. Although Islam¹² condemns discrimination and encourages pro-social behavior, some citizens feel that their cultural identity and economy is threatened. This is often linked with employment concerns by citizens, and especially young people, as foreign migrant workers become residents in the country.

Saudis who have foreign-born parents or grandparents and have been integrated into Jeddah community tend to have good attitudes towards immigrants. Harmony and mutual acceptance between ethno-cultural groups has been promoted by these Saudis who have possessed citizenship for long time. Although immigration has contributed to the development of the city of Jeddah, attitudes of these citizens towards migrant workers can vary according to the status of ethnic group members, their professional skills, or if the foreigners are required for work (Yamni, 2000, 2009).

Native people, who originally came from the rural areas across the country to settle in Jeddah and became a majority group in the city, tend to have more bad attitudes towards immigrants. Native people consider themselves to be superior groups, because of their tribal nativist sentiments and origins. Those native people support the concept of hierarchies among Saudi nationals and often show prejudice against others in order to present their social dominance. Guimond, Oliveira et al. (2010) Esses and Wagner et al. (2006) say that traditionalists create damage to existing group-based social hierarchy, because as they view those native residents who have historical origins outside the Kingdom as second class citizens.

(Yamni, 2000; Fakeeh, 2009) explain that most Saudis who have bad attitudes towards immigrants think that expatriates take economic opportunities and available work away from citizens, who are cannot find work. Saudi nationals, such as the traditionalists, consider the presence of low-skilled foreign workers, especially from Pakistan, India and Africa, to be the main cause of Saudi unemployment, as well as the main cause of crime, moral corruption and serious social divisions. Concerns about anti-social behavior and changing social norms have contributed to more negative attitudes towards expatriates, which are often xenophobic.

¹² It is the world's second-largest religion[3] with over 1.8 billion followers or 24% of the world's population.

2.8 Family and social life

Litwak (1965) proposes that families in Jeddah and other similar cities should be considered to be a modified extended family¹³ structure (Allan, 1985). The traditional Saudi family structure has to some degree changed from extended to nuclear, but differs from industrialized countries, because of the high number of children in Saudi families when compared with nuclear Western families (Khalifa, 2001; Al-Omari, 1984; Altorki, 1991).

(Fakeeh, 2009) says: government policies are the main reason for the emergence of nuclear families, with most of the ambitious social and urban development programs focused upon major urban centers, such as Jeddah. Such programs have transformed Saudi lifestyle from one of small village dwellers and nomads to one of predominantly city dwellers. The large cities now have a concentration of both employment opportunities and educational facilities, which encourages citizens to take up employment in government services. This has led to an abandonment of communities, families and traditional livelihoods, as well as the dynamics of daily life.

As (Mandeli, 2011) says: the changing economic base and lifestyle of metropolitan societies has encouraged the involvement of women in education and the labor force in order to improve their living standards and social status. This has led families of the new generation being smaller in size, since generally it is believed that it is not possible to attain a higher class status with large families and many children.

Policies of housing in Saudi Arabia have promoted small housing units, which encourage urban residents to limit the family size in order to avoid rapidly increasing residential prices of land and building construction. As a result, the people are now more mobile and allow them to have more opportunities of income and job.

As (Mandeli, 2011) says: international migrants are often young individuals and couples who are attracted to the large cities, which have increased the number of nuclear families in modern Saudi society. The housing policy is another reason that has encouraged newly married couples to live in housing away from their parents, which breaks the traditional extended family and reduces the size of family gatherings.

(Al-Nowaiser, 1996) says: Although there has been fast change in the country, kinship and family remain remarkable as a supporting network for all residents to overcome the economic hardships of unemployment and immigration. This is due to three main factors, which includes the Islamic beliefs and principles concerning cultural patterns and personal status, such as marriage and the role of

¹³An extended family is a family that extends beyond the nuclear family, consisting of parents like father, mother, and their children, aunts, uncles, grandparents and cousins, all living in the same household.

women and so on. Secondly, uncertainty, anxiety and insecurity relating to crime and moral corruption, emphasis blood ties as the strongest social network that people can rely upon. Thirdly, family honor, in the eyes of society, brings all family members together and encourages individual loyalty that keeps the family together.

The family, as a social institution, remains the main meeting place for family members. Even in cities, such as Jeddah, where there are plentiful options for recreation, sport and religious support, the ties with family members remain of high importance (Adas, 2001).

Most positions in both public, and private sectors, continue to be held by men, with women being excluded from playing active roles in work and civic life (Alshaya, 2005). The separation of man and woman is seriously applied in all shared public places in the city, as well as all cities in Saudi Arabia. (Yamani, 1996) says: the separation of women from men is traditionally accepted as a moral imperative in religious terms, and has authority to impose social restrictions on women's dress and their movement in public places.

2.9 Attitudes toward women

(Khalifa, 2001) says: new feminist movements in Saudi Arabia emerged in the new millennium, which gained a momentum inspired by the pressure applied by Western countries on Arab states to ensure human rights and gender equality. Therefore, thousands of young women are allowed to study overseas, within the program of the King of Saudi Arabia¹⁴. Opportunities that were before only for the daughters of the rich family to travel outside the country to experience the wider world have been extended to many women from low-income families.

The presence of women in open spaces in some respects is related to this research. Therefore it is fundamental to identify the role of women in ancient time, such as during the era of the Islamic Empire, women had an outstanding role in the life within ancient Islamic community, such as in nursing and trade between cities and villages by using different means of transportation, such as horses and camels. In addition there was no existed intolerance then, contrary to what is currently happening in some Islamic countries, which requires the prevents their presence in various spheres of life and suppression of women. The support of the King for the role of women in many field of the community is showing that the country is progressing in respecting women's rights, such as allowing to drive cars, entering football pitches, wearing what they want, working together with men in all areas.

It is important to note that there was a belief that a woman's future prospects and happiness are

¹⁴ External scholarship program for Saudi students

dependent on marriage in Saudi society (Al-Suwaigh, 1989). Today's women have greater control over the arrangement of marriages and the decision making about their lives; this has also increased the presence of women in public places and among the society as teacher, doctor and engineer (Alajmi, 2001; Ali Qahis, 2008). Employment and education have afforded new opportunities for women that unmarried, as well as providing women greater freedom to choose their husband.

The modernization of the Saudi economy, which aimed at providing a higher standard of living for the public, has led to an increase in women's involvement in economic, academic and social activities. Attitudes towards women's education and occupations have also changed. Different factors, such as the mass media have encouraged the growing role of women in civic life. In addition, national educational policies may be considered to be highly significant for the emergence of the Saudi feminist phenomenon (Khalifa, 2001).

2.10 Planning Issues

Rapid growth in both citizen and immigrant populations, which has worked in with the country's rapid rise in wealth last four decades. Accordingly, the city has grown physically and at a very rapid rate, which was partly due to the limited success of regulatory frameworks and spatial planning that tried to restrict evolution.

The city has a unique role because of the city's history and location in relation to Hajj¹⁵, which is one of the world's biggest immigration destinations, and this has contributed to forming and developing its urban form and demographic profile. The city continues to attract pilgrims and immigrant workers, especially from Arabic and Islamic countries, and is considering as a place of work opportunity.

(Mandeli, 2011) says: The lack of a strategic and coordinated approach has led to structural problems with roads, sewerage and water supply, leaving the city to face a number of structural challenges that included an overdependence upon using private cars, as well as large areas of empty land. The lack of affordable housing has also been reflected in over one million people, over one-third Jeddah's population are living in unplanned settlements.

2.11 Open spaces: Social attitudes

Mandeli says: the demands of new markets, together with associated planning processes that were designed to re-shape society have resulted in a sharp break with the traditional urban environment. It was assumed that the vitality and health of the economy and social transition could not be maintained

¹⁵ The Hajj is an annual Islamic pilgrimage to Mecca, Saudi Arabia, the holiest city for Muslims, and a mandatory religious duty for Muslims that must be carried out at least once in their life

without changing the shape of the built environment, and to create a context that would support a range of modern economic activities (Mandeli, 2011).

The government wished to centralize the country's economic activities in large cities, such as Jeddah, as well as modernizing society through a collection of development strategies. In addition, the Saudi economic system has been integrated with Western economies, together with a way of life modeled on modern Western luxury lifestyles (Mandeli, 2011). Large revenues from the Saudi oil industry started in the 1950s, and are the main reason for the country's rapid economic growth. Such changes have modified the physical characteristics of cities and altered the nature of the urban and suburban life. However, rapid expansion has also contributed to fewer public open to certain parts of the city. Consequently, the urban areas of Jeddah grew beyond the capacity of its infrastructure (Khalil, 1994; Eben- Saleh, 1997).

These actions have change the community, whilst transforming integrated communities into dispersed populations by development to implement housing and projects of transportation, which helped to fast expansion of main cities, such as Jeddah. Development projects of large-scale, such as substantial buildings, large blocks and wide streets were important to redevelop the old city and to create a new and modern residential areas (Al Nowaiser, 1982; Alharbi, 1989). The functional classification of land use regulation was applied by central and local authorities to guarantee the uniformity of physical structure and the rise of economic productivity. According to Al-Madhadji (2010), Islamic countries often base legislation for the environment on Islamic law, which would include aesthetic considerations when constructing new buildings, acoustic privacy, visual privacy, removing public waste and maintaining public places at a high level of cleanliness, as all these factors can negatively affect the environment.

Mandeli indicated that the destruction of traditional urban spaces and clearance of traditional neighborhoods by private investors and public sector agencies were encouraged, that contributed to the presence of a series of dispersed exclusive and depersonalized residential areas and segmented urban spaces that limit public access, which has undermined community cohesiveness (Mandeli, 2011). This resulted designs that caused the social heterogeneity and polarization, as well as led to the uprooting of people from their original communities. Al-Madhadji (2010) noted that implementing environmental legislation exposes problems, as people are often not enough aware of how these factors could be applied in their daily lives.

The disappearance of traditional buildings was encouraged by modern building regulations (Mandeli, 2011). Houses that were before resided by extended families for more than three generations were replaced with new multi-apartment building complexes, which obliged many young married couples to leave their parents houses to live in socially diverse residential areas. In an effort to promoting higher standards of living by seeking work, urban dwellers looking to make a personal profit, found

themselves either compulsorily or voluntarily in a state of constant mobility, thereby weakening the bonds of kinship and the dissolution of interpersonal relations, leaving both stability and social order to be threatened (Mandeli, 2011). Sidky and Bastawisi (2010) report on damaging effects on urban open spaces as a product of bad planning decisions in cities of the Middle East.

The development strategies that were used have resulted the physical decomposition of the urban fabric and deep segmentations in the urban content, as well as the formation of single-use areas from planning and urban design practices. Additional issue of development strategies was organizing the priority of vehicles used in the city. These factors helped to people living in various types of environments. Regulations relating to land use stressed the segregation of individuals according to their economic and social status in the city, which led to social disintegration (Bokhari 1978; Akbar, 1981).

Al-Fahad (2008) explores that few people use local gardens and parks in cities of Saudi Arabia because of the bad management and design of these spaces, and that the softscape¹⁶ and hardscape¹⁷ elements of open spaces were evaluated as bad quality, because they have always failed to provide people's perceptions and needs.

Study findings show different factors affecting to urban fabric and heterogeneity, such as creating wide streets, which as a result increased distances between buildings, building greatly dispersed and hardly accessible open spaces, failure to give protection from very hot weather and an insufficiency of facilities and public services. There is more factors include the lack of responsibility, privacy and security that are responsible for the reduction of social interaction between residents, which are responsible for the lack of social interaction among the people of the city, and eliminate the sense of identity. These have prevented users of open spaces from sheering physical activities and social experiences, and enjoying urban spaces (Al-Hathloul and Mughal, 1999; Eben-Saleh, 2002; Mandeli, 2011).

Cities of Saudi Arabia have had economic systems, spatial practices, and design practices, imposed that have led to problems within the urban environment. This has influenced the social life that exists traditionally in Saudis Arabia, and has had a bad effect on community, social interaction, privacy, children's activities, women's activities and wellbeing. Al-Musawi (2010) discusses a popular pattern in the Middle East and North Africa countries where public open spaces often failure to provide the needs of users, and are often ignored, due to the Insufficient understanding of the role of open spaces and gardens.

¹⁶ Soft-scape refers to the live horticultural elements of a landscape

¹⁷ Hardscape refers to hard landscape materials in the built environment structures that are incorporated into a landscape

2.12 Saudi Arabia: Recreation and Leisure

In order to measure the conception of the leisure types and the people perceptions and needs, a range of recreational activities will be discussed in this chapter, and will focus on the provision of recreational in Saudi Arabia by classifying the main types of recreation areas. In addition, will discuss the country demand for more open spaces for activities of recreation and how people spend their free time. to understand the concept of use open spaces and their free time to form a good social life in open spaces.

2.12.1 Recreation and leisure

Insufficient leisure time for working people limits their recreational activities, but new technological innovations and development have reduced the hours of working for most workers, giving more available time for recreational activities. Hendon (1981) explains leisure time as being discretionary and free, and with no obligations to work, but recreation activities are enjoyable due to performance and personal satisfaction.

As the United Nations Declaration of Human Rights admit that citizens have "*the right to rest and leisure, including reasonable limitation of working hours and periodic holiday with pay, and the right freely to participate in the cultural life of the community to enjoy the arts and to share in scientific advancement and its benefits*" (United Nations, 1985, p97). Al-Hijji (1989) says that in 1984 the Saudi Government adopted this UN Declaration and passed legislation relating to hours of work, time for leisure, holidays and relating to leisure activities themselves, which has increased growth in leisure time.

Since the 50s, number of working hours in Saudi Arabia has reduced significantly until it reached 40 hours per week now. Fridays and Saturdays are the Saudi 'weekend'. Students in Saudi have two weeks for spring vacation and more than four-month vacation during the summer. All government employees and workers have Thirty days of paid holiday of each year.

2.12.2 Leisure time growth

As Pigram (1983) explains: more flexible work patterns with staggered leisure times require effective management of recreation resources. Traditionally in Saudi Arabia, the growth in leisure time was the privilege of the elite, which is now enjoyed by everyone. The advent of modern lighting has led to a shift in most social and some work activities to the hours of late evening, which has helped to avoid unsuitable climatic conditions, and also allows more people to visit open recreational areas, and particularly women who might have safety concerns in dark areas.

The growth of free time is because of different socio-economic, technological progress and institutional obliges that has reduced the necessity to work for long hours to maintain adequate living standards, but living with large amounts of leisure time could become challenging for citizens in the future. Leisure time growth has promoted people to demand more recreational facilities and provision, however also would expect easy access to facilities, adequate resources, and that environmental conditions are attractive and safe.

2.13 Saudi Arabia: leisure time usage

As Hammadi (1993) says: The statutory regulation of time in Saudi Arabia is partly overshadowed by the impact of environmental and religious factors upon leisure patterns and the planning of time. The working day for the government sector runs from 7.30 am to 2.30 pm, and until 5 to 6 pm in the private sector. Time at the end of work and before the afternoon prayer “Al- Asr Prayer” is normally allocated for lunch, which is the main meal of the day and one to which guests are usually invited. Leisure time usually take place between or after afternoon prayer “Al- Asr Prayer”¹⁸, between 4 and 6 pm, after which time is available to spend with the family or as a social time for males to gather. Social gatherings, such as dinner parties, matches and games take place after the evening prayer “Al-Isha Prayer”¹⁹, which is usually between 8.00 pm and midnight; a daily pattern of life that has also been adopted successfully by migrants (Hammadi, 1993).

The lives of Muslims are coordinated with five prayer times daily, coordinated at intervals throughout the 24 hour period with other activities arranged around them. Therefore, the use of free time and people’s activities is determined by social factors, and the organization of prayer time is very important for people living in the country. The way people that allocate their time to suit the climate and the existing types of open recreational areas also includes the concern of families for privacy during their free time.

Recently, It is possible for people to continue their active day into the night because of modern technology. It is normal for the people to take a siesta in the middle of the day, when outside weather prohibit other activities.

It is often gathering some families in the city of Jeddah together at the sides of pavements, aligning their cars alongside the pavements. Some participate in camping and hunting, and in spring months of March, April and May they may do hunting in the mountains or desert for native animals. Open spaces in Jeddah that have playground are more used by families with children, as well as using these spaces for picnicking and sitting. Other people spend their leisure time visiting friends or relatives, playing traditional games and fishing. Many people prefer shade and privacy in their leisure

¹⁸ The Asr prayer is the third of the five daily prayers (salat) performed daily by practicing Muslims.

¹⁹ The Isha prayer is the night-time daily prayer recited by practicing Muslims. It is the fifth of the five daily prayers.

activities. Trees and sculpture are sometimes used for shading within the open space. People of Jeddah tend to spend their leisure time with their families at home, but when away from their home, they often meet with friends other relatives at public open spaces in Jeddah. At holidays and weekends, except during high temperatures during the day in the summer months, more free time is spent open spaces. This type of leisure activities is different to North American or European leisure activity ways.

Islam considers the act of recreation as worship if it is aimed to motivate the man for the sake the God, thus the leisure time use must not cause any damage or inconvenience to other people. Time of leisure is often spent within the Islamic laws and limits, although Islam promotes Muslims to divide time equally between recreation and work. As well Islam promotes Muslims to teach and motivate their children horse riding, shooting and swimming.

Traditions, culture, habits and customs all affect their pattern of recreation and leisure. Many of Saudi and immigrant male and individuals groups tend to be far away from families, and spend weekends or afternoons with groups of friends, sitting near the sea shore, or spending their leisure time playing volleyball, soccer, swimming and fishing. Most of Saudi and non-Saudi families often picnic in shore-line, next to cars, under bridges, to provide privacy and shade, as well as minimize exposure.

Places are usually selected where they cannot be seen, yet where they can see others at a distance, as they try to maintain their own territory for camping (Al-Abdullah, 1991). Many families often join together as one group, female groups, male groups and , single-family groups in the public open spaces. Those groups may camp in the desert together for two to three days, taking picnicking equipment for cooking and tents with them, with their own recreation patterns of shelter, pleasure and eating. Leisure time is spent swimming, playing football, playing cards, chatting, cooking and social interaction, actually during Eid vacations or at weekends, when going to open spaces, parks, deserts or seaside areas.

Families in Saudi Arabia are often prefer to spend recreation time where they find shelter and shade, in open desert areas, next to shrubs, trees, over a hill, or under highway bridges. Where there is no natural barriers, they use their cars as an alternative form of screening that provide barriers with some sort of privacy and the sense of personal territory. Time is matched by how a person perceives the way of leisure itself, which is normally predictable from evenings after work, weekends, and annual holidays. In addition, the way of using time also depends upon the activity groups and number of people in various age, also what they prefer to do with their leisure time.

Patmore (1983) describes in Saudi Arabia reading and watching television, and other home-based activities contribute to around 90% of recreational time for most people. However, Nahass (1986) found the lack of adequate open recreational and public entertainment facilities contributed to

television being the main leisure activity for males and females, although the hot climate could also influence this. Currently, many people in Saudi Arabia spend their leisure time using social media or video games.

2.14 Recreation: demands by people

The government of Saudi Arabia has admitted the importance of forming more opportunities for open recreation, because most Saudi people are able to spend some of their time, effort and money on open recreation. However, currently, the demand for recreation in Saudi Arabia is greater than the supply of facilities. This increase in demand for a better environment, housing, social status and enhanced conditions in comfort and convenience in all aspects of life was the result of rapid population growth, as well as the economy, transportation, and education (Hammadi, 1989). According to Pigram (1983), increased demand for recreation activities was synchronous with the availability of more free time.

Gallion and Eisner (1980) explain that better perception of recreational demands would explain the reasons for under-participation or non-participation certain areas and activities, which would minimize wastage of resources, and guarantee additional investment of recreation that guided towards development. Increased demands for recreation activities in Saudi Arabia requires a solutions for design policy problems, insufficient resources and unsuitable planning.

Economic stability in earlier retirement and regular retirement, together with a longer life span, further increase the demand for more recreational activities. As people move to the urban environment from rural areas, More open spaces are needed to facilitate congested and crowded areas by providing green and public open spaces. As people become healthier and better educated, they demand more recreation opportunities.

2.15 Summary

This chapter gives general information about the context of the study location of Jeddah in Saudi Arabia and describes the geographical location and the effect of the dry and hot climate, moreover the historical evolution of the people of the country which forms the current culture of the popular, religious and social factors that shape life in the present Jeddah. The urban extension of Jeddah has occurred because of oil revenues that has negatively affected its infrastructure in terms of unplanned open spaces, slum neighborhoods and a reliance on private cars. The status of immigrant workers has also been described in depth, as these immigrants forms around 50% of Jeddah population, in addition to using of public open spaces in the city along with Saudi people. The role of immigrant

workers in the economic development of the country has also been discussed, also explains problems of negative attitudes towards immigrant workers by Saudi people. These findings also present that planning and urban design has not meet the needs of users for recreation and leisure activities in open spaces in the city.

The following chapter discusses the findings from the literature review on open spaces and their role and impact in social life, and users preferences for some spaces on the other based on the concept of social interaction.

CHAPTER THREE
LITERATURE REVIEW

CHAPTER THREE

LITERATURE REVIEW

3.1- Introduction

This chapter reviews the researches, studies and theories that discuss the difference in peoples' experiences of open spaces. Research that gives attention to open space experience, benefits and usage, has raised over the last years. The methodology for collecting the data relating to peoples' experience and motivation to use open spaces ranges from experimental studies (Hartig et al., 2003) to qualitative approach (Rishbeth and Finney, 2006) to different and new methods of identification, such as the walking voices project by Powell and Rishbeth (2012). This variety of research methods has tried to grab various types of data to detect different dimensions of behavior and interaction of people in and with open space, but all of these studies relates to the use and quality of open spaces which reflected on the level of social interaction inside them.

The literature review was done through searching of a set of databases, and a scope of magazines, articles and books. The online database resources included the Google Scholar, Web of Knowledge (now Web of Science) and Science Direct. In order to reach to greater scope of various subjects, Citation searches were used. There were a range of terms that were used to search on Internet databases which regards to open spaces, social life and interaction of users. In addition to a mixture of terms within Saudi Arabia, Arab countries and the Middle East is used. As the context of this research is based on an Arab and Middle Eastern country, it is important to recognize all studies related to this context.

The chapter structure is reviewing the literature within the following sections, which examines findings linked to the relationship between people and open spaces, social wellbeing, types of usage and users, such as age, gender and ethnicity. This review to identify the relationship that people form with open spaces, which motivates them to form social relations with others, so that the sense of open space is analyzed, that leads to the main point of the research study which is the impact of open spaces in the social life.

Part One :Open Space Studies

3.2 Open public space

A public space is a social space such as a town square that is generally open and accessible. Public space has also become something of a touchstone for critical theory in relation to philosophy, (urban) geography, visual art, cultural studies, social studies and urban design. The term 'Public Space' is also often misconstrued to mean other things such as 'Gathering Place', which is an element of the larger concept of social space. As a description of open space, Jan Gehl (1987) refers to an open area as a space that allows people to practice different types of activities, including optional social activities.

Most streets, including the pavement, are considered as a public space. Town squares, parks and the governmental buildings which are open for public, such as public libraries, all these are public spaces. Buildings which are not considered as public spaces are privately owned buildings or property visible from sidewalks, and public thoroughfares may affect the public visual landscape, for example, by open advertising.

Public spaces are commonly shared and created for open usage throughout the community, whereas private spaces are individually or corporately owned. An area which built for a range of various recreation and entertainment. Through the landscape and spatial organization of public space, the social construction is considered to be privately ruled: by the implicit and explicit rules and expectations of the space that are enforced. Marcus and Francis (1998) describe the idea of open space as public, semi-public, and semi-private open space, which includes publicly owned and publicly accessible open spaces, such as neighborhood plaza spaces. Spaces that are privately owned and managed, but accessible to the public, such as corporate plazas, college campuses, as well as those that are owned privately and accessible only to a particular group of users, such as elderly housing are also included within this category. This is generally considered that everyone has a right to access and use public space, as opposed to private space which may have restrictions.

In this research, the definition of open space will be within the urban context of Jeddah city, such as parks, garden, as well as open spaces, side streets of a city and corniche area. In addition to open spaces in Jeddah which also including natural areas, such as the desert. Those open spaces allow users to practice and experience some social activities that may be necessary, as well as optional.

3.3 Open spaces and city form

What defines a the city character and value is its open space. Heckscher and Robinson (1977) suggests that the common professional approaches to city formation indicates that the skeleton of a city is formed by its public space, upon which business centers, neighborhoods and institutional complexes rely upon.

Open spaces of high quality are the starting point for reviving communities. That well-functioning, attractive and active public space can be a turning point of economic development in a community from a small town to a main city is being recognized significantly around the world. Historically, streets have for been a fundamental part of the public field, providing a spaces where dealers can present their goods, people can stop to talk and children can play. The growing spread of cars has reduced out these uses. Retrieving streets as space for people can supports cities in different ways environmentally, economically, as well as socially.

Neglected gardens or plazas, back streets and stairways in a city are not underutilized, but potentially could be valuable assets. Because they belong to everyone, even if they are perceived as belonging to nobody. However, they are developed, they can be used to strengthen and enrich the communities. Ozguner & Kendle (2006) mention that attitudes are influenced by how well public spaces are maintained and managed, and that many immigrant residents identify favorite areas.

Public spaces are a fundamental element of successful cities. They support to form a sense of community, identity and culture. Public spaces facilitate social interaction, community revitalization and economic development. This is as true In Arab and Middle East countries as it is elsewhere in the world. In order for city dwellers to support their recreational activities and social interactions, dynamic public spaces are essential. The character of a city is determined by its parks, streets and squares and other open public spaces. The social and physical functions of a public place and the manner in which it can enhance the safety, pleasure and care of urban users has developed in recent years (Lynch, 1960; Carmona et al. 2003).

There is no clear open space system²⁰ in Jeddah, which reduces the opportunity for the dynamic use of public spaces. The reputation, image and life of a city are enhanced by urban public spaces (Cybriwsky, 1999). The provision of public spaces adds an essential dimension to the life of the city, as well as giving users a sense of attachment and civic identity, both emotionally and physically.

Waterfront of Jeddah is a fundamental example of similarities in the typographies of open spaces, because it has the potential to provide a full range of leisure and entertainment facilities, if it was minutely designed and meet the needs of people. The use of public spaces can be completely

²⁰ Open Space System is a system of green corridors in the city, the system links a number open spaces sites.

different in different cultures, such as in Saudi Arabia, there is a lack of open spaces within residential areas. Society life within the country is dependent upon a range of complex cultural, religious, economic and legal factors that lead to a misunderstandings of urban design and spatial planning in Jeddah.

Growing demand for vehicles and accommodation has increased alongside the evolution of Jeddah. Those demands have forced the city planners to provide a compatible infrastructure for new methods of transport and buildings. The urban design and planning progress have led the open spaces within the city to be ignored.

3.4 Mental and Social Wellbeing and Open Spaces

Ulrich et al. (1991) mention that natural settings restore positive effects and reduce fear, anger and aggression based on attention restoration theory and stress reduction theory. Promoting stress reduction, relaxation and restoration rely to a large extent upon the provision of open space (Green Space Scotland, 2008).

Western researches into the relationship between mental-social wellbeing and open spaces often indicate to their pattern of open spaces, that good and green spaces, which means poor mental health experiences for people living in dry and hot countries, such as Saudi Arabia. As a result, the findings that good and green open spaces provide restorative qualities that necessary need to be translated to the different context of Jeddah.

The reasons for the impact of green space upon mental health differ, but include exercise and open activities, stimulation of the senses, natural daylight, and aesthetic experience (Green space Scotland, 2008). Being in open spaces could help in the recovery of the attention fatigue and in restorative experiences, because being away, soft cape features, and the extent and compatibility of nature could all promote people's physical and mental senses, as open areas attract attention automatically without the need for concentration (Hunziker, Buchecker and Hartig, 2007).

A study in Sweden revealed that the greater the length of time that people spend in open public green space, the less stressed they feel, which is independent of gender, socio-economic circumstances and age (Grahm and Stigsdotter, 2003). According to Ulrich et al. (1991), people act spontaneously to nature, which directly produces positive psycho-physiological reactions that help to reduce stress. Nevertheless, in some cases, open spaces can be a reason of stress, such as traffic jams, crowded areas and repugnant places in the urban context. These findings linked closely to Jeddah context because of the dry and hot climate, in addition to excess of private cars and public open spaces that are often crowded.

Pretty et al. suggests that poor quality countryside locations could have less restorative effects than good quality sites (Pretty et al., 2003). That is related to the Saudi Arabian context, however, motivation to visit open spaces are often linked to Family activities, Kids entertainment, or for groups of friends to talk and meet. but many open spaces in Jeddah have poor design and bad maintenance, which minimize their restorative effects.

People in Jeddah seek to flight from their feeling of stresses by visiting open spaces that have special restorative qualities to help them emotionally. Grahn & Stigsdotter explained a connection between stress and visiting open spaces, as when people spend more time in open spaces, this contributes to reduced levels of stress they experience in their daily life (Grahn & Stigsdotter, 2003).

Even though the context of Western green open spaces are regularly cited in Western studies, this study investigates the restorative qualities of open spaces in the city Jeddah that are took place in a different context, but also participate to afford mental wellbeing for these open spaces users. Softscape elements including trees and plants of public open spaces that can attract people to use these spaces within the city, but the landscape of desert around the city is a motivation for many people of Jeddah to have a different typology of open space. In addition, the research also investigates the perceptions towards green spaces, also behavior and social life of people living in hot and desert landscape countries.

Public open spaces facilitate social wellbeing including social relations and interaction, as they support settings to promote 'social capital'²¹. However, some studies contest these findings (Amin, 2002; Valentine, 2008). Kawachi et al. (1997) stated that the benefits arising from 'social capital' are available to all those living within a particular community, and access to it cannot be restricted, but there are many barriers for individuals to engage in society, and community could be defined in different ways (Crow and Mab, 2011). Immigrants often use public open spaces to become more familiar with everyday activities, rather than specifically to build social networks; however, these spaces offer forms of contact that could be culturally specific (Rishbeth and Finney, 2006). These findings have a direct connection for this research, as the city of Jeddah has a high number of immigrant workers from different countries, also the patterns of use for these people are a fundamental element of this research. The cultural and social traditions of Jeddah also indicate that Saudi people usually use open spaces as spots for social interaction and recreation within groups of friends or between families.

Kweon et al.1998) pointed that the use of open spaces by elderly people and spending more time with other people in these spaces promotes their sense of community and social integration (Kweon et al., 1998). Participation in the local environment also helps refugees integrate into a new society

²¹ Social capital broadly refers to those factors of effectively functioning social groups that include such things as interpersonal relationships, a shared sense of identity, a shared understanding, shared norms, shared values, trust, cooperation, and reciprocity.

(Rishbeth and Finney, 2006). Sullivan et al. (2004) explain that people are more attracted and engaged socially in the areas between buildings in comparison to barren spaces.

A diverse community can promote social capital by having open spaces for common use, such as plaza, parks or garden. "*Parks are considered community assets and bringing people in the surrounding areas to a common place for leisure purposes, a time when people are more likely to be open to what they see around them and receptive to others, because they are recreating together and sharing a Common space*" (Cohen et al., 2008, p. 201).

New friendships and more contact with different people in the park for those who shared physical activities were seen as a positive experience by most female respondents in the study by Krenichyn (2004, 2005), so that "*regular contact in the park led to more permanent affiliations founded on common interests, which was a pleasant surprise for some women who initially used the park only for solitary fitness activities*" (Krenichyn, 2004, P124). There are numerous studies that have investigated how public open spaces could improve the social life and community by gathering people. Research by Chiesura (2004) and Macnaghten & Urry indicate that people's positive experiences in woodland spaces were noted by most of the participants.

Open activities can also motivate people to meet new people and create more relationships. According to Morris (2003), social interaction, as well as improvements in the quality of life, may be enhanced by open recreational activities. However, the social and cultural traditions in the context of Jeddah are different to Western communities investigated for these researches, but social interaction at open spaces in the Jeddah are regular activities for groups of friends and groups of families to spend at recreation activities.

Kuo and Sullivan (2001) suggest that the greater use of public spaces increases surveillance, as well reducing factors that lead to aggression. Open spaces users in Jeddah are worry about safety, especially for areas with bad lighting at night, because of that women hardly use some open spaces during the night. Concerns about safety in open spaces are also highlighted in some research studies (Burgess et al., 1988; Burgess, 1995; Jorgensen et al., 2007).

The urban context is structured in ways that promote residents' friendships and socializing, especially for immigrants and cities with diverse communities (Kathiravelu, 2013). Societal benefits such as these may not create positive interaction, but may prevent negative social interactions. These findings are related to the context of Jeddah, as around half the residents are migrant workers, who are often separated from their families and friends for long periods, and open spaces are used to meet with others that share the same language or culture. Kathiravelu (2013) suggests that social interaction and friendships in open spaces can be seen as a ritualized forum.

3.5 Open spaces in the Middle East countries

This section discuss the need to place the literature of public open space use in the Middle Eastern countries. This study is focused specifically on the city of Jeddah in Saudi Arabia: a city that has unique culture linked to a country that is special in terms of its political context. However, in having a look more largely at patterns of use in open space it is important to identify possible similarities, especially the relevance of similar studies occurred in countries that have a similar climate, and those that share in Arabic culture; generally Middle Eastern countries, North African countries and some Mediterranean countries. This will guarantee the study is related to a wider academic and professional readership than one determined by national boundaries.

It is important to mention that the number of European and Western studies of social life and usage pattern of public open spaces is more than the studies that about the North Africa and Middle East. This study aims to address a big gap in knowledge. Activity of academic research varies across the region; therefore there have been some point of interest, especially about big cities such as Cairo. However, it has been important to address a broad approach to literature contexts, including grey literature relating to practice based work. As well this is useful to reach the aim of this study relating to professional practice.

Also the researcher uses studies in the Arabic language, as there are some papers and studies that review the design, management and benefits of open spaces but are realized as grey literature. Online searches allow studies of open spaces in the North Africa and Middle East, using keywords include open spaces, parks , gardens, green spaces, landscape, in addition to use other keywords related to planning, design and management. The online search has occurred in Arabic and English languages.

3.5.1 Social and Cultural Uses of Space

Across history, plazas and gardens have developed as an identified characteristic or element, demonstrated in Babylonian, Persian and Greek cultures. Also these artistic elements and historical perspectives are also reflected in Arab plazas and gardens that provide examples of Islamic features and Arab culture, such as the Alhambra Garden and Jannat Al-Aarif. Al-Nassan (2008) describes plazas and gardens as having specific importance for religious and cultural reasons for Arabic society and for Muslims living in Arab countries.

Different researches and studies of the North Africa and Middle East countries examine the development and rapid urban expansion of different sectors in the region. The rapid urbanization often resulted in fewer open spaces and greater demand for leisure activities from a growing

population within cities, moreover, the lack of responses from municipalities to meet the needs of open spaces users. Last years, the municipality of Al-Majmaah city in Saudi Arabia conducted a study to examine why people of the city do not use the parks, plazas and gardens designed and built by the municipality. Al-Fahad (2008) cites an article in the Al-Jazirah newspaper²² that reported that between 80% and 85% of families considered that the facilities of public gardens failed to meet the needs of their children. Other findings from this newspaper report indicated that only 20% of local respondents used these public open spaces, and that most respondents thought that the poor design and management of these open spaces were the reasons that few people used these spaces. In addition, these findings suggest that the soft-cape and hard-scape features of these public open spaces were of poor quality (Al-Fahad, 2008).

The study conducted by Al-Majmaah²³ city municipality as well detects that most children (80%) under the age of 16 years spend most of their free time on streets or unplanned open spaces of the city, which considered as unsafe in comparison with plazas, gardens or parks that are not used. Al-Fahad (2008) discussed that most children (65%) wanted to use public open spaces to play soccer, 22% wanted opportunities for climbing and jumping, 10% wanted electronic games and 3% wanted spaces for fireworks (Al-Fahad, 2008). The municipality of the city used the results and information of this study to improve urban design and planning in the future, so that the views and opinions of child and adult users of open spaces in Al-Majmaah city would be considered. However, rapid urbanization of must in the Middle Eastern cities because of the extension of the oil industry over recent years has had a strong impact on increasing social variety, and its consequent influences on usage patterns of open space.

Nagy (2006) suggests that patterns of use of public open spaces are influenced by the large numbers of migrant workers in this region that often produces social distinctions for specific open spaces based on feelings of affiliation, strategies and behaviors of individuals and attitudes towards social diversity. That are complex, so that official policies and discipline tend to overlap and interact. Malecki and Ewers (2007) funded that cities within the context of Arab Gulf States demonstrate urban expansion as a result of the accumulation of wealth from the oil industry, which has been responsible for many workers migrating to the region, such as Western skilled workers and Unskilled workers from other developing countries in Asia and the Middle East region. One of the important influences on social and cultural usage patterns in open spaces in the Middle East region and Islamic countries is gender.

Ilahi (2010) suggests in a study of the meanings of open spaces in Egypt that the experiences of males and females are different in terms of social space in the country, but demands for freedom for females to make greater use of public open spaces by feminist movements in the country are often

²² Al Jazirah is a daily Arabic newspaper published in Saudi Arabia. It has more than thirty national and international branches.

²³ Al Majma'ah. is a city and a governorate in Ar Riyadh Province, Saudi Arabia. The city has an area of 30,000 square kilometers. The population of the town is around 45,000.

challenged by religious leaders. Usage Patterns of open spaces in Islamic are influenced by gender societies, also there is a need for further study to investigate whether feminist movements have been successful in overcoming opposition of conservative groups to changes, and whether the needs of females are sufficiently considered when creating and planning new open spaces. Unplanned open spaces would include streets that demonstrate patterns of use for people, also streets in Middle Eastern and North African cities have been investigated.

Nooraddin (1998) highlighted the importance of streets as part of the urban context of the city and defined these as in-between spaces. Streets were defined as lines that separated open from indoor spaces in addition to played an fundamental role in historic parts of Arabic and Islamic cities. These in-between spaces are particularly neglected in the Middle Eastern cities.

According to Al-Sayyad (1981), in a study of the streets of Islamic Cairo for different generations, the report indicated that due to the lack of information and previous studies about the social, economic and natural factors, it was not possible to generate principles for contemporary urban design. This study was based on the review and analysis of physical criteria based on the history of the Muslim built environment (Al-Sayyed, 1981).

3.5.2 Planning, Design and Maintenance

Early 1980s, the rapid growth of the urban infrastructure of the city of Cairo²⁴ raised concerns about the extension of this region cities and the problems that this created for cultural traditions and society. A conference organized by the Aga Khan Foundation for Architecture in 1984 discussed the problems of rapid urban growth of Cairo and other cities in the region, and recognized that compared to other cities across the world, the lack of open spaces in this city represented a low per capita open space. These discussions led to the construction of Al-Azhar Park in Cairo that was financed by the Aga Khan Foundation, and represents the largest designed public open space in the Middle East and North Africa, and includes Islamic elements and features, and is specifically modeled on the Fatimid style²⁵. Salahuddin (2004) explains that Al-Azhar Park demonstrates a revival of the Al-Bustan concept that is a common pattern in gardens in Islamic countries, and provides an example of innovative design and planning, but also the involvement of the local community in its preservation and maintenance. Although this improvement of an open space in Cairo started over 30 years ago, it gives examples of urban renovation, socio-economic growth and recognition of cultural and historical elements of importance that could be socio-economic evolution and recognition of historical and cultural elements of importance that could be used in open spaces in Middle East cities before making decisions of managing, planning, design, developing and maintaining.

²⁴ Cairo is the capital of Egypt. The city's metropolitan area is one of the largest in Africa, the largest in the Middle East, and the 15th-largest in the world, and is associated with ancient Egypt.

²⁵ The Fatimid style that developed in the Fatimid Caliphate (909–1167 CE) of North Africa combined elements of eastern and western architecture, Byzantine, Ancient Egyptian, Coptic architecture and North African traditions.

Sidky and Bastawisi (2010) in the first Arab Conference on Housing in 2010, explained that the motive and focus for this conference were the effects on urban public open spaces as a result of poor design and planning decisions in Egyptian cities. This study tried to encourage the benefits of open spaces in cities in the region and their importance, and reviewed the structure, design, type and scale of open spaces in Egyptian cities, comparing these influencing factors with international standards.

These findings report that rapid extension of urban areas resulted in a bad influence on open and urban spaces within the cities, thus, that cities in Egypt were described as an urban environment that demonstrated a lack of balance. Other findings suggest that citizens often have an insufficient awareness of urban open spaces in terms of aesthetic and function values, as well as showing a sense that citizens often lack a sense of belonging. Sidky and Bastawisi (2010) also found that urban open spaces in cities in Egypt had lost a perception of their own importance and unique identity even though urban spaces define the structure of a city, and argue that the concept of urban open spaces relates to earlier periods of history in Egypt involving military, commercial, social and religious activities.

According to Al-Madhadji (2010), there is a general consensus that the environment should be preserved to ensure environmental protection, access to public open spaces and a green infrastructure, but municipalities and some users of these open spaces often negatively influence the environment. Therefore, environmental legislation based on Islamic law is needed in Middle East countries to address issues of construction of new buildings, acoustic privacy, visual privacy, removing public waste and maintaining public spaces at a high level of cleanliness. Environmental legislation should also determine how users of public open spaces behave, and to encourage users to help to maintain cleanliness in gardens and open spaces, but this is recognized as being difficult to implement, as citizens are often insufficiently aware of how shared responsibility for maintenance of open spaces applies to them.

A comparative study in Sabratha²⁶ in Libya and Dubai in UAE was undertaken by Al-Musawi (2010) to investigate the potential benefits and quality of open spaces within these cities, and whether they met the needs of users. These findings suggest that the case study sites of Sabratha and Dubai reflect a common pattern across North Africa and the Middle East, as there are insufficient public open spaces to meet the needs of the local population, and that most open spaces in this region demonstrate signs of neglect (ibid). This region has also shown that commercial, industrial and residential demand for land has increased significantly, so that those responsible for urban planning decisions often identify public open spaces as land that could be used for urban development. This study finds that decision makers in municipality planning departments often lack sufficient understanding of the importance of gardens and open spaces to users, and indicate that there are no

²⁶ Sabratha, a city in Libya, It lies on the Mediterranean coast about 70 km (43 mi) west of modern Tripoli. The extant archaeological site was inscribed as a UNESCO World Heritage Site in 1982.

profit incentives in designing and creating garden spaces. Al-Musawi argues that professional designers of gardens and public open spaces appear to lack awareness of the potential economic and social benefits from investing in the development of public open spaces to meet the needs of local people that could contribute to improving their lives by effectively designed and maintained public open spaces.

The findings from this study indicate that the open spaces and parks in Dubai²⁷ represent a sophisticated model that attempts to apply global standards to the design and management of public open spaces, which is recognized from the perspective of the city, as well as the perspective of local neighborhoods, so that public open space in this city serves the local community and tourists that are attracted to this country. Both cities used as case studies share a similar climate and location that is represented by important historical sites that attract many tourists; however Sabratha in Libya has very few gardens and public open spaces, and the urban development of the city often uses open spaces that would have the potential to be designed and created as gardens and parks for people to use (Al-Musawi, 2010).

Gaza²⁸ is used as a case study in research taken by Hirzalla (2014) that examines the growth strategies adopted for urban public open spaces. This research explores that most public open spaces in Gaza are physically and visually bad, so they often do not have a purpose or function. These open spaces also often lack elements of softscape and hardscape normally existed in planned and designed spaces, and the climate factors are ignored, so that appropriate plants, trees, water supplies and shade have not been considered. These factors negatively affect the possible use of these public open spaces by people, as urban design and maintenance have failed dramatically to enrich the environment of these spaces (Hirzalla, 2014).

Urban growth and its effects on the landscape of Syria are discussed by Atfah (2013) that investigates the changing images of cities, and particularly the urban expansion across the countryside areas. These findings indicate that the rural communities culture is starting to change by the city's urban growth that is an fundamental issue that the country government needs to address. Atfah (2013) argues that the impact on social life and the landscape of rural areas by urban expansion has been insufficiently considered or clearly defined, which poses threats for the environment for future generations by changing rural landscape spaces into urban development without considering the implications of this development.

In a research of the city of Nablus²⁹, Abbas (2008) explored that its urban design policy provides no consideration to the needs of women when making planning and design decisions, so that

²⁷ Dubai is the largest and most populous city in the United Arab Emirates (UAE). On the southeast coast of the Persian Gulf, it is the capital of the Emirate of Dubai, one of the seven emirates that make up the country.

²⁸ Gaza is a self-governing Palestinian territory on the eastern coast of the Mediterranean Sea, that borders Egypt on the southwest and Israel on the east and north.

²⁹ Nablus is a city in the northern West Bank, north of Jerusalem, with a population of 126,132.

interviewed women for this study reported that they did not feel physically or socially safe in the city, and specifically at night. These findings say that planners and designers of urban spaces need to give more consideration to women needs, as they are around half the city population, so that their presence within open spaces should be respected.

The literature review reveals many studies and papers written that explore open spaces in the North Africa and Middle East, where some are published and some are not published (Makki, 1987; Buanaqh, 2009), such as investigations into the forming and design of gardens and parks whether they provide the appropriate regulations and standards (Al-Qiei, 1995; Mahdi, 1983; Badr, 1992), open leisure and recreation activity provision (Hammadi, 1993) and evaluations of the value and quality of public open spaces in residential areas (Mandeli, 2010).

The studies cited above often concentrate on knowledge that is repeated and general in various researches, such as the criteria used when forming and designing open spaces, as well as parks designs. In addition, most of these research doesn't have references to the perceived needs of users of these spaces, or how design quality of open spaces can promote users' experience when using open spaces.

Other research explore how the municipality work can be controlled at the level of administrative, which presents real work to decision makers involved in maintaining, designing and planning open spaces, as well as at a level of government, as existing weaknesses in managing public open spaces in the North Africa and Middle East seem to be connected to decision makers and administrative departments that work from an office far away from these open spaces.

3.6 Gender, Age and Ethnicity of Open Space Users

The demographics of users, such as gender, age and ethnicity, need to be fully understood in order to meet these benefits and fully understand the value of open spaces. Users from different gender, ethnicity or age have different ways of perceiving and using open spaces, which is important to understand. There are different reasons as to why people use open spaces (Frumkin, 2003), with human variability leading individuals and groups to have different perceptions when using public open spaces (Frumkin, 2003).

3.6.1 Gender

Study by Burgess (1995) reveals that open spaces are often considered as safe places. However, it is fundamental to realize that threats, such as sexual harassment, are often happened to women within open spaces. In terms of their interpretation and assessment of danger, the use of open spaces for women vary, with some participants claiming that they did not feel unsafe or limited.

Issues of safety are understood as of secondary importance and the company of others is appreciated (Krenichyn, 2004). These findings are also related to women in Jeddah, but the traditions and customs of some conservative families often oblige women to be accompanied by men when they are out of the house.

Most references to previous studies relate to female users of public open spaces and are based on Western studies, as there are insufficient studies of the factor of gender for patterns of use of open spaces in Islamic countries. However, gender is an important issue when investigating open space users, and the findings of Western studies remain an important contribution to this research. The scope of this study is to highlight the issue of gender for patterns of use of public open spaces in Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, and relevant studies of gender in Islamic countries are included in this research.

In a study by Macnaghten and Urry (2000) reveal that many female respondents are afraid of walking through the woods, particularly at night. Some mothers are concerned about their children being safe if they play in the woods. Other studies suggest that female respondents might have perceptions of sexual assault or possible crime, rather than the reality of safety in wooded areas (Pacione, 2003; Keane, 1997).

Relationship research indicate gender differences in terms of perceivable benefits and uses in public spaces (Curson & Kitts, 2000), and boys tend to become involved in activities and use public open spaces more than girls (Makinen & Tyrvaenen, 2009). There is clear separation of gender in different ways in open spaces in Jeddah, so we do not often find mixed groups of friends that contain boys and girls together

3.6.2 Age

Children are likely to develop a different relationship with open spaces, when compared with adults, since their movement through time and space tends to be limited, as children are restricted to open spaces in their home locality (O'Brien, 2006). Valentine (2004) reports that the relationship that children have to open spaces can form two sections, since there is a perception that, due to potential dangers and risk from predators, young children need to be protected in public open spaces. This view contrasts with older teenagers who are often viewed by television reports and newspapers as threatening to society, which could be a source of safety issues for other users. Patterns of use of open spaces in Jeddah indicate that family groups that would include all age groups often use these spaces for recreational activities and to share food, so that young children are closely monitored. However, older teenagers would be more likely to form male or female groups during these visits to open spaces that are separate from groups of older family members, so that they are not disturbed by physical games, such as football.

There is another important factor for the open spaces use which is age, so that findings indicate that older people prefer to use these spaces less than others. Participants over the age of 60 were more unlikely to use parks (Greenhalgh and Wolpole, 1996). In another survey, participants over the age of 65 were noted as low users or non-users of public open spaces, which compared to the 12-19 year old age group (Dunnett et al., 2002). Another research reveals that park users were found to be usually under the age 50 years, yet age was not a factor that affected the choice of preferred activities. The family and social nature of usage patterns of public open spaces in the city of Jeddah indicate that users are frequently part of a family group or friendship group with different ages.

3.6.3 Ethnicity

Rishbeth and Finney (2006) explored that parks were often visited as a social action within the family, but not lonely, in a research of how refugees understand and use open spaces in Sheffield (UK). Therefore, farms of the city and some types of urban open spaces were new concepts to these participants, who mostly considered these open spaces as a novelty. The refugee participants also said that they visit open spaces that have flowers and plants, to remember their countries home, which helped to retaining their national identity. The city of Jeddah contains a big number of immigrant workers that also visit public open spaces, where immigrants also presents similar usage patterns to unite with others of the same ethnic background and language, as well as forming relation to softscape elements that remind them of the natural environment of their countries of origin.

There was little association with visits to open spaces by refugees and asylum seeker respondents, because they felt that public open spaces had little relevance to them, and so made very little use of these spaces. Various reasons were given for avoiding these open spaces, which included safety concerns, lack of money and inappropriate behavior (Rishbeth and Finney, 2006).

Those from different ethnic origins using parks were researched by Payne et al. (2002) in the USA, where the views of different ethnic users often differed from Caucasian respondents, such as showing a greater preference for activities that were organized, and were usually more interested in recreational activities than conservation. Another study by Tinsley et al. (2002) suggest that there are differences in the frequency of visits to parks and preferences for specific activities that cannot not be explained by proximity. Caucasian and African American participants preferred to identify natural elements, such as flowers and trees, which they felt more than Hispanic or Asian participants. African American participants were more likely to visit the park with friends, while Caucasian participants often visited the park with family members or alone.

Some restrictions were shown when connecting study findings to ethnicity because great diversity is not reflected. There is usually overgeneralization in quantitative research, which could fail to account

for 'mixed' identities³⁰. First and second generations are also insufficiently distinguished, with various groups of ethnic being categorized together. Qualitative research, in contrast, are often localized and generalization would be not easy. The review of literature as well indicates insufficient research that demonstrating ethnic diversity in non-Western countries, as well as Arab dispersion.

Part Two: Social Life Studies

3.7 The Social Dimension

Generally, social dimension is considering the open spaces from the perspective of society interactions with these places. In other words, the social dimensions care about relationships between the people and these spaces.

3.7.1 The Theoretical Antecedents of the Social Dimension of the Built Environment

The social urban theory has emerged first time in the 20th century, representing extensions of the previous sociological theories impacted by the Chicago School of sociology (human ecology). This school has been emerged at the beginning of 20th century. The major scholars of this school were Ernest Watson Burgess (1886 – 1966) and Nels Anderson (1889–1986) and it has been specialized in urban geography. Nels Anderson has set his own theory about the development of urban geography that has relied on two main models determinism and environmentalism. He has discussed through his theory and studies the impacts of the urban environment on the societies. He has conducted his researches based on analyzing the trends of planning and social intervention agencies (Madanipour 1996).

The terminology of 'sociology of knowledge' has been widely spread in the field of urban development in 1920, this is the assumption set by Berger and Luckmann (1967), who were mainly the student of Schutz (1899- 1959). According to Berger and Luckmann the terminology has been innovated by the German sociologists generally and Max Scheler (1874-1928) and Karl Mannheim (1893- 1947) in particular. Two German sociologists has written several articles about the knowledge and beliefs, they believed that all knowledge and believes are generated through the impacts of socio-political factors. Hence, in order to make a reliable understanding of the interaction between human beliefs and social environment we shall at the beginning make an analysis of the processes of awareness that shape the social reality. This wouldn't be able without our efforts to check the cultural and historical roots (Fathy 1988). In 1967 Schutz has published his book named phenomenological sociology, through his book he has concentrated on the concept of 'receipt knowledge' as a main source to identify the interaction between the individual and surrounding society.

³⁰ Multiple nationalities

Through reviewing the literatures that have discussed this issue we can find out that the role of the urban designers are limited to setting the perceptions about the urban development but they can't predict the constant interaction of the public to these settings. Human interactions and impressions towards the setting can be measured through their social values. Lawson (2001) has indicated that the social values of group of people living at somewhere will be the main driver of how they may use space located at this area where they live.

3.7.2 Social production and construction of urban space

"Lefebvre" assumed that the social space is a consequence of thoughts and events that finally shape the significant of the built environment at the places where we live. This is why he set his assumption that there is a direct correlation between the social aspects and the building of built environment.

Ardena (2004) assure the relation between space, social totality and our interaction and impression toward this totality. Castells (1977) suggested that in order to realize the reliable understanding of aspects impacting the constituting of urban space we need at first to understand the relation between production and consumption processes. Clark and Dear (1986:2) has accepted the conclusions of Castells and added that in order to achieve the comprehension of the 'socio-spatial processes there shall be an analysis of the social and historical aspects of production and reproduction.

3.7.3 The concept of the public sphere

'public sphere' or 'public realm' , two terms that is related to the urban design process which are usually related to the concepts of public life and public space in a manner that some people may feel they are the same term (Mitchell 1995). Linguistically the term "public" is the opposite of the term "private". Kamerman and Kahn (1989) urged that public sphere is referring to the open spaces such like the public markets and it may also have a social meaning such like public sociability.

For example at the countries where the socialist is the command system, there will not be private and public spaces as all open spaces in the urban will be considered as public. As known about the socialist system, it aims to unify the public benefit of all available resources at the country.

Several researches have been conducted to clarify the relation between public sphere and public space. Almost all researches has concluded the complexity of this relation since public space may be considered as a raw material of public sphere and in other cases the public spheres is considered the standard for evaluating the public space(Garba 2007). Through her contribution Hannah Arendt (1958) has referred to that public sphere can be defined as square where people can meet and

discuss about some issues. Jürgen Habermas (1962) has relied on her contribution to set a definition of the public life as he define it as a level of participation about the political and social affairs as the individual's opinions are shaping the public opinions which in turn impact the decisions made by governing bodies, these decisions later impact the citizens affairs.

Ellin (1996) believes that public and social activities has been decreased at the public spaces and has been moved to private realm. Carmona et al (2003) has observed the relation between the modern means of transportations and the decline of the public realm. Graham (2001) has another view as he believes that the decline of public sphere is coming as a normal result of the managerial restrictions of the usages of public areas such like gardens and streets. While other researcher Carr (1992) has explained the phenomenon as a normal consequence of the changes of life styles in modern life. The emergence of the Internet and social media has contributed significantly to the reduction in the desire to use public spaces, and the lack of social interaction within the public space.

3.7.4 The influence of digital space on the role of public space in social interaction

The emergence and accessibility to technology and social media have significantly influenced in the demand for the use of public space. Leetaru (2017) mention that as the private curated walled gardens of social media have increasingly replaced the democratic free-for-all public space. Social media (Facebook, Instagram, Twitter ... etc.) has largely replaced the public space in solving many problems of social interaction. Al-Hawari (2015) believes that social media take into consideration the categories that were vulnerable to exclusion and marginalization in traditional public space dominated by political, cultural and economic provisions.

However, the presence of some negative aspects such as health and security problems of social media sites, in addition to the existence of distinct public spaces, so these social media sites could not take the role of the traditional public space in the formation of real and touchable social relations. Qotbi (2018) suggests that virtual public domain cannot in any way be considered as an alternative to the traditional public sphere. It is parallel and integrated with the creation of new spaces for discussion, transcendence of intellectual stereotypes, and breaking of traditional barriers to public space.

3.7.5 The concept of social exclusion

Madanipour (2003a: 183) believes that the existence of the social exclusion is a result of interaction of some political, economy and social factors and the role of this interaction on the social production of urban spaces. Separation of the public spaces into public and private spheres has created fences around some areas and prohibit some social strata of existence at these spaces.

Carmona et al (2003: 124) has referred to the contradiction between the meaning and implementing of public realm. He explained his perspective that while public realm means the ability of all to access to the public realm some restrictions and obstacles are prohibiting certain section of society from their right of access. Discussing the concept of social exclusion will lead to the significance of discussing other related problems of built environment (King 1990: 116).

Ruddick (1996: 135), has referred to an existence of racial discrimination that is practiced against women where they are excluded from the public realm, or when they are only entitled to participate within certain limits. He has found some similarities between the racial discrimination that was practiced at the colonial territories and the spaces that have been specified for certain people only at the gated complex and similar places.

During the process of designing the urban environments some social exclusion³¹ practices may emerge. This practice is represented in the protection and restriction regulations that may be imposed with the aim of preventing some social levels from the access of some particular places. Carmona, Heath et al. 2003; Madanipour 2003a).

Although there are several social threats emerged as a result of social exclusion that occur as consequence of the urban environment planning there are huge neglecting concerning treating this issue especially at the modern cities where inclusive public realm is not existed at all. Starr (1989) believes that the designing of the modern domain where several restrictions has been set to prohibit certain social levels from access this areas in a manner that deepen the social exclusion. There shall be more consideration for enhancing the inclusive public realm when designing and planning these spaces (Madanipour 2003a).

3.7.6 Public spaces and neighborhoods as sites for social interaction

It's widely accepted at both theoretical and literature that the public spaces are those spaces where public and social interaction such like meetings and celebrations etc. may be held. (Mitchell 1995). Lefebvre (1991) believes that any society throughout the history has specified some spaces that meet the social functioning. Both (Arefi and Meyers 2003) and alzed (1986: 470) has the same view about the public spaces as they consider them the spaces to practice several public activities and hold public meetings. Several researches and studies have been conducted to recognize the main factors that may impact the interaction with the open spaces. They have concluded to two main

³¹ Social exclusion is the process in which individuals are blocked from (or denied full access to) various rights, opportunities and resources that are normally available to members of a different group, and which are fundamental to social integration and observance of human rights within that particular group.

factors that could be divided into sub factors. As for the main factors they are physical factors that include the designing of these open spaces. The other main factor is the non-physical factors that include formal aspects such like the laws and regulations governing the cities where these open spaces exist and informal aspects such like time and health. They are also important non-physical factor which is the personal variations. (Williams 2005)

Concerning the physical factors, both planning and theories of urban design have illustrate the impact of the designing on the interaction of the people with the urban space. (1966 cited in Lang 1987: 160). Osmond (1966 cited in Lang 1987: 160) has contributed in the process of explaining the public interaction with open space, he introduced two new terminologies **sociopetal** and **sociofugal** that refer to the reasons behind decline the public interaction with open spaces. **Sociopetal** spaces are referring to the open spaces where public meeting can be easily. On the other hand **sociofugal** are referring to these spaces where gathering much people can't be happened.

3.8 Person and Place relationships

With the rapid changes that happened during the past five decades the movement and transportation has become easier than ever, more places has been accessible for persons (Lewicka, 2011). The role of that open spaces playing in today's people life has become more essential as the interaction with these spaces has also varied. People are nowadays more interesting in the open spaces that encourage the public interaction (Efroymson, Thanh Ha & Thu Ha, 2009)

As a consequence of the increasing of the importance of the open spaces and the interesting of people in these places and the increasing of interaction volume with these spaces, several researches has been conducted to recognize the relationships between people, spaces and the environment surrounding within the field of spaces establishment. Among these studies are this research that relies on the literature and conclusions of the previous studies in order to recognize the factors impacting the environment and interaction with open spaces. The research has make the analysis from various perspectives including environmental psychology, sociology, community psychology, human geography, and other related aspects. (Lewicka, 2011).

3.9 Bonding and sense of place

The main concept of environmental psychology is the place concept. There is difference between definition of place and the concept of space, which has been generally agreed (Relph, 1976; Low & Altman, 1992; Tuan, 1977); even though, the researchers couldn't get a unified definition about the bonds of people towards the places. There no clear reason of this uncertainty but it has be because of absence of similarities and linkage between the several concepts.

There are some non-physical factors that shape the relation and impression of person towards the places such like the emotions and experiences and events that happened at such place. (Harris, Brown & Werner, 1995).

In some cases, personal impression toward a place is relied on the personal cultural awareness (Altman and Low, 1992), since some places has some historical significance that attract the persons (Altman and Low, 1992). Also the activities that have used to be practiced at these places may play an important role in shaping the people interaction with the place.

The physical features of certain place also play a significant role. Some researches has found that more the design of places are encouraging to practice social activities at this place the more the interaction of people with this place. Later on the residents set a sort of social protocols about these places in a manner the enhance the effectiveness of using the place and reduce the negative social actions that may lead to the crime increase. (Sampson & Groves, 1989).

The attempts to classify the open spaces and the interactions of people towards them has found some main classifications based on the identity and dependence of the space. Proshansky, Fabian & Kaminoff (1983) urged that the identity of the space can be measured through the positive and negative impressions that people may have. The identity of the place is mainly shaped through the feelings that people have, in this case the fillings may be generated through the existence at the place or in sometimes reading about the place also play a role in the impression that persons may have. (Prentice & Miller, 1992).

As mentioned above the identity of the place is generated through the experiences people have and their impressions as well. Jacobson-Widding (1983) has added that the identity has two components which are sameness (continuity) and distinctiveness (uniqueness), when we talk about the place identity the identity in this case include both the two components. The terminology that is used to describe the unique features of such place is called *Genius loci*, which is widely accepted by scholars of the field Norberg-Schultz, 1980; Stedman, 2003), While this terminology may also refer to the future of persons rather than future of places.

There are several standards that has been set by people to evaluate the places, major standard is how they needs they expect from the place are met. This factor or standard is known as place dependence. People are making comparisons between alternatives also as a method of evaluation. (Stokols & Schumaker, 1981). People also may rely on their previous evaluation of the place as standard of judgment.

The term place attachment is referring to the non-physical bonds linking people with places. While it's

not an countable items researchers has set three elements that can be used as measuring scales which are: Affective, cognitive and behavioral elements of place attachment (Jorgensen & Stedman, 2001; Kyle, Mowen & Tarrant, 2004; Low & Altman, 1992),(Shamai, 1991; Shamai & Ilatov, 2005; Stedman, 2002 and Williams & Roggenbuck, 1989; Bonaiuto, Aiello, Perugini, Bonnes & Ercolani, 1999; Fe'lonneau, 2004; Hidalgo & Hernandez, 2001; Kyle, Mowen et al., 2004) suggested that the most reliable measure for this relation could be the emotional component. Designing and physical components are the most influencing factors on peoples' impression, except in some cases where social and demographic factors has more influencing power. (Stedman, 2003).

Several researches that has been conducted on environmental aesthetics has concluded the superiority of historical places over modern designs for most people. (Nasar, 1998), (Hayden, 1997; Devine-Wright & Lyons, 1997; Hay, 1998) argued that people prefer the historical sites because of the impression of connectivity to past that is provided by these sites. This study assumes the relationship and correlation between people living by historical sites or pre-war architecture is more than the correlation between people living at modern places to their neighborhood (Lewicka, 2005).

While some of the researchers argue the existence of relationship between place attachment and place identity other researchers deny. For some researchers the both terms couldn't be the same as they are used interchangeably (Williams et al., 1992). In some cases the affective (place) attachment is considered and can be referred in the same terms as place identity (Stedman, 2002; Jorgensen & Stedman, 2001; Kyle, Mowen et al., 2004). Some authors argues that the both terms has the same meaning and they are both related to the concept of place identity (Puddifoot cited in: Pretty et al., 2003). A further view that precedes the formation of place identity (Hernandez, Hidalgo, Salazar-Laplace & Hess, 2007) believes that even one may feel attached to a place, it takes more to incorporate the place as part of self. Actually there isn't one sole reason that can be considered as main reason for getting attached to somewhere. The bond to the places has several stages and levels and is influenced by several factors as well.

For example, having some personal relations "relatives, friends, etc." living at somewhere, maybe a reason for attachment to the place. Or maybe a result of occurrence of some happy events or the place where he born and lived his childhood period (Manzo, 2003; Milligan, 2004; Relph, 1976; Gustafson, 2001b; Low, 1992). (Fe'lonneau, 2004) argue that attachment to someplace may be a part of the national identity.

In some cases the attachment to the place may be due to its' national or religious value. For example certain places at Jeddah will have a significant value at the hearts of people as they considered the places which people go through during their way to Mecca To perform Hajj and Umrah. Mazumdar and Mazumdar (1993), Possick (2004) through the research he conducted has found that there is a direct emotional linkage and attachment between people "citizens" and the lands and places which

witness conflicts between two or more groups. Such as the conflict between the Palestinians and the Israeli occupier at West bank of Palestinian occupied land.

Hence, the cognition of certain place may vary as consequence of variation of national identity.

When the relationship with a certain place is developed due to the feeling of prosperity, safe and comfortable the bond to the place will be higher in this case than if the bond was for national reasons. (Hernandez et al., 2007; Knez, 2005). Hence, the more the interaction between people and place, the more the emotion bond to the place as this create the place identity (Hernandez et al., 2007). Results concluded by other researchers suggested that places, spaces, things and objects extend beyond individuals' perceptions to create self-identity, and that individuals socialize their perceptions of the physical world to create place identity (Proshansky et al., 1983). Korpela (1982, 1992) argues that when someone choose a place as his favorable place his selection of the place along with the features of this place create together stability of this person. Other researches has argued that the hold to certain place is a consequence of place dependence and place identity (Schreyer et al., 1981; Williams and Roggenbuck, 1989; Kyle et al., 2004) One UK study of London Docklands and the area of Rotherhithe that has been conducted to analyses attachment to residential environments argue that there are two ways that identity is related to place that are place identity and place identification (Twigger-Ross and Uzzell, 1996).

Several researchers have found out that the relationship with such place could be on group on individual bases. (Dixon and Durrheim, 2004; Knez, 2005; Lewicka, 2008; Tuan, 1977); hence, the features that contribute in creating the emotional relationship with such place is impacting the place identity, for example, places that is characterized by religious importance with maintain its' importance (Mazumdar and Mazumdar, 2004).

(Smiles, 2006) argues that people are more likely to be bonded to their homes and other places at their neighborhood. Their feeling is usually affected by their behavior and values.

Many researches has been conducted to analyze the human interaction with places and the reason of existence of attachment with certain place, Grieder and Garkovich (1994) has conducted a research to inspect this issue from the sociological perspective which has concluded that the symbolic meanings that he place have influence the social human interaction. Gupta and Ferguson (1997) has conducted an anthropological study and has found out that the places has an impact of the daily cultural life of persons. (Relph, 1976, 1997; Buttimer and Seamon, 1980; Tuan, 1977, 1980) has conducted a research about the impact of places from another perspective to evaluate the sense of place which reveals similarities in environmental psychology studies that have defined the concept of place attachment (Brown, 1987; Altman and Low, 1992). (Giuliani and Feldman, 1993) has inspect the environmental psychology aspect and set a definition to the place attachment as the bond between person and place. At the beginning, built environment was the only focus for researches on

the place attachment, later on the researches have also added another aspects and sorts focused on attachment to resource dependent communities and tourist communities (McCool and Martin, 1994; Vorkinn and Riese, 2001), special places for local people in the nearby area (Eisenhauer et al. 2000), attachment to recreational and tourist destinations (Williams et al., 1992a; Moore and Graefe, 1994; Bricker and Kerstetter, 2000; Vaske and Kobrin, 2001), and place attachment for individuals who own a second home (Kaltenborn, 1997a, 1997b; Jorgensen and Stedman, 2001).

(Williams and Roggenbuck, 1989; Schreyer et al., 1981; Stokols and Shumaker, 1981) argues that the place attachment could be a result of the activities that could be accomplished at the place. So, it could be assumed that the place attachment could be generated through the value of activities that could be achieved through this place.

Therefore, elements of self-identity are revealed by place attachment (Proshansky et al. 1983), improved self-esteem is achieved (Korpela, 1989), perceptions of belonging to a community are enhanced (Relph, 1976, Tuan, 1980), and environmental values and policies are promoted (Cantrill, 1998). Moore and Graefe (1994) reported that place identity could be created by repeat visits to a specific place due to place dependence, but other findings suggests that this might not be directly related to specific experiences with the place (Proshansky et al. 1983). According to Giuliani and Feldman (1993), psychological attachment to a place is created over a period of time.

3.10 Person, process and place dimensions

Scannell & Gifford (2010) Has suggested the existence of three main dimensions. This three dimensions from the researcher perspective are considered the main factors that impact the human interaction with the place. The three dimensions are person, process, and place

3.10.1 Person

The person dimension is the first dimensions of the three dimensions suggested by Scannell & Gifford, person may refer to individual or group of people. Factors impacting the attachment to such place varied from person to group. On the individual basis the attachment may be due to some memories that have occurred at certain place. While the group will be attached when the place has a certain cultural or religious impact.

3.10.2 Process

The second dimension is the process and it refers to the psychological connections which links

people with the place. The psychological impact is impacted by three main factors which are effect, cognition, and behavior. While the first factor doesn't indicate if the affect will be positive or negative as it could be any of them. Cognition is through the interactive events and memories which shape the personal knowledge of the place, the third factor is the behavior and it refers to the impression and action that people may take, such like reconstruction of lost places

3.10.3 Place

The most important dimensions are the place. Talking about place tend to explore what is that thing that impress the people? What are the physical features that bond the person to the place?, this could be occurred at one of the two levels, social and physical. The social attachment refers to the social reasons linking the person with the space such like being bond to his own room. Place attachment is the positive bond to one's environment, which has a well-being aspect that is relevant to the cultural ecosystem. Place attachment might provide other beneficial effects, such as place-protective behavior, increase in pro-environmental behavior, and an increased sense of safety (Scannell & Gifford, 2010). The resulting effects of place attachment are dependent upon the dimensions that are actualized in the model.

3.11 Summary

Through this chapter we have reviewed the literature reviews that have explained the social and individuals reasons behind the interaction between people and open spaces from several perspectives. In order to examine the main reasons impacting this relationship. The findings from that we get from this chapter are correlated to the research methodology as the relationship between people and places has been examined from several perspectives.

CHAPTER FOUR
RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

CHAPTER FOUR

RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

4.1 Introduction

The initial part of the chapter shows how these ambitions informed two primary approaches: the importance of understanding of open spaces as an integration of fabric, formation and cultural practice, and the potential of storytelling methods to represent and elicit complexity of social life in open spaces. Therefore this chapter presents the methodological approaches and methods of this study.

The methodological approaches are formed by the study aims to identify why and how people use public open spaces in Jeddah city, to examine the role of these spaces in forming interaction between users and improving the social environment of the city, then to make recommendations for improved urban design and planning to meet the needs of users of open spaces in the city more effectively.

The main body of this chapter demonstrates the mixed methods used in the study fieldwork. The content shows the making of decision process of how the city of Jeddah and case study open spaces were selected, and a full description of all methods used, also includes discussion of ethical implications for working in Saudi Arabia. This chapter is concluding by discussing the analysis and interpretation of the data (Figure 4-1).

Research from many disciplines is involved in investigating the social dynamics of open spaces, and the literature review indicates the variety of used methods. A wide range of both quantitative and qualitative research methods are used, includes the use of observation studies and interviews; As well as more landscape specific methods such as photographic diaries or walking interviews. It is fundamental to recognize that methods of research are within a cultural context, and need to respond to the expectations, constraints and opportunities of the location and potential participants. In this research, the suitability and context of potential methods of enquiry with open spaces users will be critiqued with respect to the Saudi context. Also the approaches used needed to be able to demonstrate the perspectives of different stakeholders; a broad diversity of open space users, as well as regulators and designers relating to the open spaces of the city.

4.2 Methodological approaches

The methodological approaches for this study draw on the findings of the literature review and the specificity of the study aims and objectives. The investigation of open spaces and social life required a methodology that integrated the fabric, form and culture of urban design. Open spaces and social life study is often described as divided between qualitative and quantitative methods. The methods used in this study needed to provide the researcher with insightful details about the users experience and bonds to open spaces. According to Gorman and Clayton (2005), qualitative research enables data to be collected from the context of occurrence, so that occurrences can be described, and complex textual descriptions of how people experience and interact with public urban spaces. Qualitative methods used to record the use of public spaces are flexible, informative and are better able to deal with the complexity of values and perceptions of open space. The research context is located in an Arab community, so particular care is required to accurately address and represent the relationship between practices and social norms informed by gender, transnational links, socioeconomic status, religion and culture.

Within this broadly qualitative approach, it was fundamental to identify key principles, referred to in the thesis as methodological approaches, which would ensure that the methods would be effective in treating the aims of the study: understanding the open spaces and their impact on social life.

To reach the first aim, it was fundamental to ensure reliable ways of registering use of public space, and what types of open space were most commonly used in a Saudi Arabian urban setting. To have better understanding of the types of open places in Jeddah for users this study determined typologies for the public open spaces in the city that needed to be aware of the appropriate spaces commonly used for the context of Saudi Arabia and the city of Jeddah. The exercise of such case studies will assist in gaining a clear understanding of how the use of physical spaces is related to user's sense and his interaction with others and with the open space. Therefore, this research used case studies of specific open spaces in Jeddah city based on the researcher's knowledge as an urban designer. The data collection was by interviews and observations techniques at these open spaces.

The second aim required an understanding of how users' value and potentially can help in the formation of comfort and belonging to the space and then interact and form social relationships with other users. The bond between people and places could be critiqued within an understanding of their cultural backgrounds, behavior, psychology, cognition and affection for social or physical features of spaces (Scannell and Gifford, 2010). This research investigated open space sites in the city of Jeddah where people have diverse social, cultural and religious backgrounds, because of that the researcher needed to ensure that the observations and respondents interviewed reflected this diversity in terms of emotional bonds and social interaction. This determines a need to adopt a story

telling approach to collect information from users that would detect more details of these factors that influence uses and social interaction.

In addition, the analysis of qualitative data requires a systematic procedure that is guided by specific objectives that can be gained by an inductive approach (Thomas, 2003). These findings justify the use of an inductive approach for this study that reaches the aims and objectives by systematic analysis of qualitative data to register these intangible factors.

The methodological approaches used for this research, investigate open spaces as an integration of fabric, form and cultural practice, and adopt storytelling methods to elicit complexity of social interaction.

4.2.1 Investigating of open space as an integration of form, fabric and cultural practice

The research needed to investigate open spaces in the city of Jeddah to discuss the particular key problem in this context: that planning, urban design and maintenance of open spaces insufficiently meets the needs of users, which affects their desire to form relationships and social interactions among them. This issue is mentioned in the literature review, but through careful survey work and interviews with users it has been possible to confirm this. By starting with specific open spaces, first in developing a typology then selecting representative case study open spaces within these categories, the study could ensure applicability to a Saudi Arabia, Arabian and Islamic context, and to the diversity remits of planning and urban design practice in varied levels of management and design intervention. A focus on particular open spaces in the selected city allowed for open spaces to be observed over time, obtaining an understanding of physical, cultural or social uses in space and related to the design or specific physical features on the space.

It was necessary that the methods used enabled reflection of temporal and spatial dimensions of public space activity. Accurate recording of these in a different range of public spaces was needed in order to produce data that is categorically different in many respects to data regarding of social use of public space in North American or European literature. Integration of time and space within a designed open space has been key to understanding some of the cultural patterns to being open spaces in the context of the country, patterns that reflect Arab traditions, Islamic religious practice and human adaption to hot regions.

Implied within this approach is the grounding of social dynamics³² in the physical form and materials of landscape. This may be termed a 'landscape specific' approach (Rishbeth. 2014 – the Place attachment book one) where an attempt is made to counter a purely sociological understandings of

³² Social dynamics refer to the behavior of groups that results from the interactions of individual group members as well to the study of the relationship between individual interactions and group level behaviors.

human interactions. The researcher's background in Urban design and Landscape Architecture practice was influential in enabling professional interviews to be conducted to gain better understanding of open spaces and social life, encouraging participants to provide clear details of their memories and experiences by ensuring flexibility in the interviews structure. Methodological development drew on this expertise explicitly helped to address the aims of this study, but also meant that qualities of open space were foregrounded even in the more narrative aspects of the study findings.

In Jeddah the common language is Arabic³³; therefore, questions of interview for most participants were translated into Arabic, except five participants who were immigrants. the researcher recorded the answers in the language used for each interview. Part of the culture In Saudi Arabia is to forbid females and males who are not related from interacting together in private and public, therefore female volunteers were recruited to assist with the interviews in some cases, because the insights of women are necessary in the current research. One female member of the researcher's family accompanied the researcher when conducting the interviews at the selected open space. Eighty-five interviews were undertaken in total, and the female participate was involved in 27 interviews with the researcher. Before conducting the interviews, the female assistant was given instructions and guidelines on how to conduct the interview and how she could encourage the interviewee talk more about the important points. She also attended a few interviews with the researcher when he was the interviewer, so that she could have a clear image of how to conduct interviews. In some cases, the researcher interrupted the interview when conducted by the assistant to clarify or add another question. The interventions were carried out by passing a card to the assistant with new questions. This raised challenges for the researcher that would not have arisen in Western research studies, but is an accepted part of society in Saudi Arabia. The locations were selected on the basis that both males and females would normally use these, and could be adopted for the scope of this study. This process of questioning is reflected by the grounded hypothesis approach whereby every interview question feeds into the next one (Kvale & Brinkmann, 2009; Willig, 2001). The skills of interviewing participants are learned as the interviews proceed, which relates to both the researcher and respondents (Kvale and Brinkmann, 2009).

The integration of fabric, form and cultural practice when investigating open space requires mixed methods to collect data of usage patterns and social life as there are complex intangible factors that influence these. Interviews and observations were carried out at the case study open spaces, each of these methods have different strengths in terms of looking at cultural and social practice in designed open spaces. Researcher observations are especially useful for obtaining an overall perspective of usage patterns and to attempt to identify patterns that could be different for Saudi and non-Saudi users. Interviews, however, can provide a rich quality of responses from a storytelling approach that provide detailed information when respondents gives opportunities to respond from their own

³³ Arabic language It is named after the Arabs, a term initially used to describe peoples living in the Arabic area, which are 22 countries.

perspectives and memories of incidents. By working with both, and also discussing the findings with professionals, the study was able to critique the integration of values and attachments with a realistic representation of how spaces are actually can be a platform of social interaction (Table 4-2).

Addressing the integration of open spaces and social life from a specifically urban design research practice raised the limitation of commonly used terminologies for types of open spaces. Open space typologies are shown in the literature review, but these are based on Western studies that include typologies that are often irrelevant for use in the context of the city Jeddah in Saudi Arabia. In developing the methodological scope for the research project, it became clear that an initial stage was needed to develop an open space typology to meet the specific diversity and use of open space in city, which could be used by future studies for case study open spaces in the North Africa and Middle East that might reflect similar climatic, cultural and social issues. This development of an open space typology also addressed the aims of this study to identify implications for improved design and planning of open spaces to meet the requirements of immigrant and local people within the urban of Saudi Arabian context.

4.2.2 Adopting storytelling methods to elicit complexity of open spaces and social life

This research intends to investigate perception and values related to open space as informed by intangible factors, such as socio economic status, gender norms, social norms and practices associated with ethnicity and religion. In particular, there were seen as relevant in shaping forms of social life in open spaces. The methodological approaches to investigate the complexity of open spaces and social life need to understand design qualities of open spaces that are temporal and sensory. Issues of cultural memories are also need to be considered. Data collection should be from users with different backgrounds, especially when these methodological approaches are applied in Saudi Arabia, where cultural, religious and social factors are likely to be different from the methodological approaches adopted by most Western researches. The context of this research within Saudi Arabia includes the factors of community, religion and culture that are not often considered in Western researches, so that challenges included the conservative community of Jeddah city that does not welcome approaches from strangers. In addition to religious laws prevent females from speaking with unknown males to collect research information, and the importance of personal and family privacy in open spaces in the country makes it difficult to get full understanding of social life in open spaces with traditional questions of interview.

According to Sandercock (2003), she stated that stories could be a useful tools for planners. She indicated that planning can be applied through story because it has the strength to present the knowledge and how people perceive the city (Sandercock, 2003). This is different from the analysis of narrative and representations of narrative for case studies used in study in Western countries, where participants are often more willing to talk openly about their relationships with space.

Therefore, storytelling methods are used for this research to overcome the collecting information challenges from Arab people that is very conservative, so that individuals' lives are reflected their experiences in a series of stories. The context of the interviews at the case study open spaces adds greater value to the collected data, as participants reflected on the elements of the open spaces that motivated them to visit the space and forming a social life.

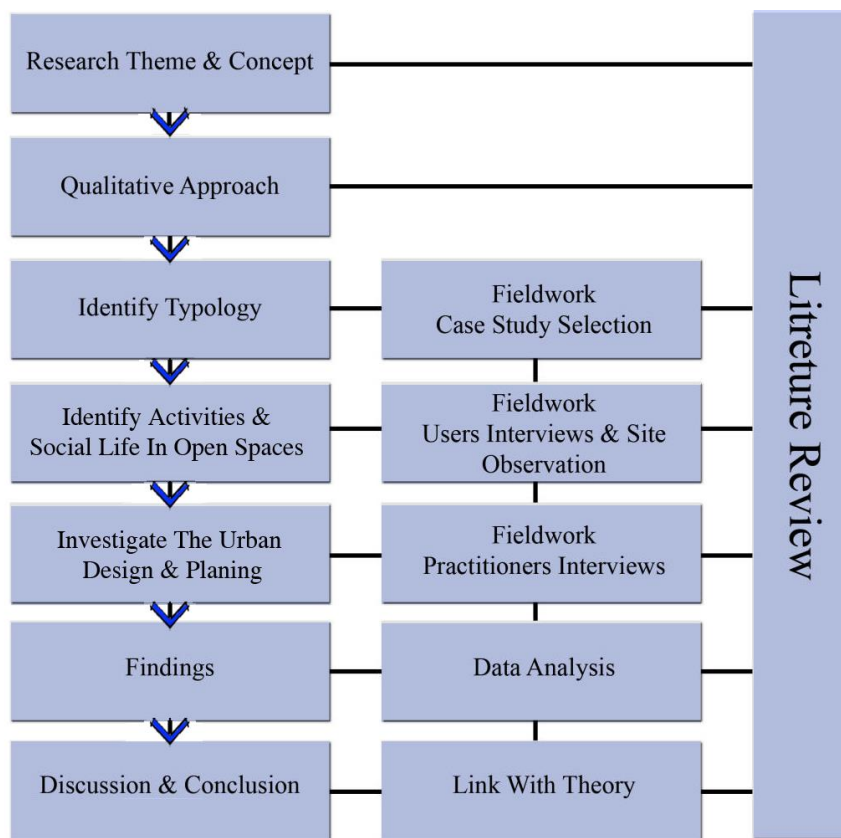
This study aimed to achieve flexibility within interviews, to achieve personal interaction between the participant and the researcher. The understanding of open spaces and social life might be promoted by responses to semi-structured interviews by preparing the structure to meet what would be acceptable for the participants, wherefore gaps, difficulties and contradictions could be defeated by storytelling methods to gain better understanding open spaces and social life, and the underlying practices of fabric, form and culture. To challenge any perceived gaps or contradictions in information, the researcher has opportunities to ask supplementary questions³⁴ and interact with participants.

The use of a storytelling approach in this study has enabled complex textual descriptions of social life within open spaces based on the experiences and interactions of groups and individuals, as well as helping the researcher to triangulate and give detail to study observations and give more accuracy to the knowledge previously obtained about the users' social relations, experiences and usage pattern of open spaces in Jeddah.

The following sections address the specific methods engaged in the study, and how they are incorporated in developing the analysis and the findings for this study. In addition, each section states and reflects the limitations and problems by conducting these methods, how they were appropriated from Western based research practice and reflect some of the issues raised through researches in Arabic and Middle Eastern countries. These are examined for each of the selected methods and explain how the researcher dealt with these problems.

³⁴ Explanatory questions to explain the idea better in the case that the participant in the questionnaire did not understand the meaning of the questionnaire questions

Figure 4-1 Research methodology process



Source: The Researcher 1

4.3 The Selection of the City of Jeddah

The researcher has selected the scale of a geographical setting to be appropriate for this research rather than investigating more than one city, comparing different cities with similar religious, social and cultural backgrounds. The researcher justifies this geographical setting, as the findings could provide valuable information for those responsible for decision making about public open spaces in Jeddah.

The city of Jeddah is chosen as the geographical setting for this research for a number of reasons. There have occurred major developments in the city over many decades, because of the impact of expanding commercial activities, and improving the economy of Saudi Arabia. Jeddah presents a typical example of a city in the Middle East region, but is also exceptional as many immigrant workers are staying there, as well as its location as a seaport means that many pilgrims from other countries pass through the city. There is also need to provide such study, due to fast development that happening with the participation of Western landscape architectural companies, as well as a dynamic growth within the urban design profession. This research is distinctive from others in terms of culture within an area that tries to accept development, yet also desires to preserve the traditions and customs from previous generations. The aim of this study is to investigate the open spaces

residential areas in Jeddah, and attempts to provide new knowledge that can improve social life in these spaces.

The researcher is familiar with and possesses current knowledge of the city, in terms of its socio-cultural perspective, residential areas and open spaces. In addition, the researcher has previous experience when conducting Bachelors and Masters studies, as well as practical work experience in planning and design proposals in developing residential and other spaces across the city. The researcher graduated as Bachelor of Landscape Architecture Department at King Abdul-Aziz University³⁵ and later became a lecturer in the same university within the Faculty of Environmental Design. Governmental and academic contacts are readily available, which could give essential assistance in gaining relevant information from various parts of the city such as Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs and Jeddah Municipality. Familiarity with the city is advantageous for this research as it results in a reduction in time for getting information and guarantee that the study is embedded in a good general knowledge of the urban contexts of the case study locations.

4.4 Overview and Integration of mixed methods

This research has mixed approaches to obtain better understanding of open spaces and social life by users of public open spaces in the city of Jeddah, which investigates open spaces as an integration of fabric, form and cultural practice, and adopts storytelling methods to elicit complexity of open spaces and social life. These methods were then adapted to use case study open spaces to develop a typology that was appropriate for this city and the cultural, religious and social backgrounds of the people, which included observations, on-site interviews and practitioner interviews.

These methods supported the objectives of this research by identifying typologies of public spaces in residential area used usually by neighbors, and recorded activities and use that encourage social interaction across demographic factors on different days and different times of the year at case study open spaces. The ways that users adapted to the open space, share meaning and develop responses to specific places were investigated, and identified differences between Saudi and immigrants. Professional practice relating to management, planning and design was also recorded and analyzed, which focused on social requirements, and implications for urban designer professionals were formulated.

Different open spaces in Jeddah were visited during an initial explorative survey to gain sufficient personal knowledge and experience. This process was essential to form a detailed understanding and to clarify the direction of the study. During the survey, photographs were taken in order to establish the overall state of the environment, as well as the contemporary public spaces. The initial

³⁵ King Abdul-Aziz University (KAU) is a public university in Jeddah, Saudi Arabia.

survey included walks, observations, and short dialogues with the users of the selected public open spaces. *"When you observe behavior, you soon become aware of repetitive activities in identifiable places. Place-specific activities within such a pattern are more closely related to one another than to patterns of activities in other places. In different socio-cultural and physical settings the same behavior can have different design implications"* (Zeisel, 1981, p114).

A pilot study was made during the initial stage that lasted from 2nd December 2014 to 5th January 2015 and from 5th March to 24th April 2015. The aim of the pilot study was to set up the availability of data, the feasibility of selected public spaces, further exploration of the study question, as well as to define the most appropriate method to complete the research. A diversity of data sources was required for the pilot study, including base maps, aerial images of the city dating from different periods, and maps of Jeddah produced in different scales. In addition, the pilot study has considered of Jeddah's population and demographic characteristics.

In order to achieve the aims of this research, there are two phases within the fieldwork (Table 4-1). Both of these phases require different strategies and activities necessary to take account of their respective similarities and differences. In order to maintain a record of the process of the study, in addition to recording the time available, two phases were devised. This process would enable public spaces to be analyzed according to the seasons. In addition to different methods used for gathering data were arranged.

Table 4-1 Pilot study, fieldwork and data analysis

					2013	2014	2015	2016
Jeddah fieldwork		12/1/14	1/30/17	565.5				
Pilot Study 1	Researcher	12/1/14	1/5/15	26				
Pilot Study 2	Researcher	3/5/15	4/24/15	35				
Fieldwork preparations	Researcher - Supervisor	7/1/15	12/1/15	109.5				
Observation	Researcher	12/1/15	4/15/16					
Interview	Researcher	12/1/15	4/15/16	97				
Transcription	Researcher	1/1/16	6/23/16	125				
Data Analysis	Researcher - Supervisor	7/1/16	1/30/17	152				

Source: The Researcher 2

In the fieldwork a minimum of 85 interviews were conducted, which will be explained later in this chapter. The researcher used the on-site interviews to obtain more knowledge from the user's usage pattern of open spaces. The observation also helped to record user's activities and behavior, which related to spatial and temporal aspects. These approaches will contribute to the gap in knowledge when open spaces and social life is studied in the North Africa and Middle East areas that differ from the findings of Western literature that reflect different societies and cultures.

Table 4-2 introduces the objectives and aims that are addressed by the use of each data collection method. The following sections will present and give more details about each method that was used to collect data.

Aim	Objective	Method
1) To explore how and why people use designed public open spaces in the Jeddah city urban context.	a) Identify typologies of the urban open spaces that are popularly used by people. b) observe activities and use across demographic factors at different times, and on different days of the year in selected case study sites.	- Identify typology - Observation - On-site Interview - Photographs
2) To explore what is the role of modern public spaces compared to traditional public spaces of Jeddah city in the formation of a platform for social interaction.	c) Investigate the ways that people develop their interactions and relationships with each other, and define the activities and uses that are attractive and generator of social relations in modern public spaces and traditional public spaces.	- Observation - On-site Interview - Photographs
3) To determine some of the implications for improved planning and design of public open spaces In line with government plans and actors in decision-making to meet the requirements of users within the Jeddah city context, thus contribute to bring back the social life to those spaces.	d) Critique current situation of professional practice relating to the planning, design and government administration of public open spaces in Saudi Arabia, especially in Jeddah, with specific focus on social requirements. e) Clarify implications for the urban design profession, working on the planning, design and government administration of open spaces in Saudi Arabia.	- Observation - Practitioners Interview - Photographs - Studying the role of government in the planning, design and management of open public spaces.

The following sections explain each method used for this research, which is followed by an explanation of the process of how the data collection was integrated into the research findings.

4.5 Identifying typology

Table 4-3 Summary of the methods for identifying typology

Selection	Method
Activities	Desk based data analysis and Car survey – on site survey.
Data collected	Photos – Maps and Satellite images review.
Time Scale	Between January 2015 and July 2015.
Objectives met	B,C and D

In order to have a better understanding of Jeddah's open spaces and how the citizens and non-citizens use, there was a need to collect data about the normal uses of these open spaces on social basis (Table 4-3). While the data collected and surveys conducted have been performed on specific spaces at Jeddah, the result obtained could be generalized on other Saudi and other Arabian countries similar places. The main approach applied was to analyze the behaviors of citizens toward these places. In other words, the approach used is to check the activities practiced at these areas. The aim behind this is to understand the classifications of these areas from the residents' perspective, through collecting data about how often residents are visiting these places and what are the social activities they practice. (Zeisel, 1981, p114).

The main purpose of conducting the classification is to have a closer view about how the people at Jeddah tend to use the available open areas. Actually, there were several main uses such like practicing sports and organizing social meetings and several other uses that will be explained later on. The researcher has collected data about the available spaces and the most popular uses of them. Actually, there are several aspects that may impact the use of certain spaces, the most common aspects are the cultural aspects. The surveys he used has collected data from several places such like the seaside, gardens, and several other meeting areas at Masjids and markets. Which has been classified as places of gathering the residents to practice a certain activity. The researcher has also make use of his knowledge about the culture of Jeddah residents. He collected data about several open spaces located at various locations of Jeddah. The time frame was the period between January and July on 2013.

There is no doubt that getting a better understating and developing the typology has a great value not only for this research but also for any further researching processes. In the following I'd like to list the case study and methodology applied as following:

4.6 Case study

Figure 4-2 Location of Case Studies



The case study is defined by Stake as “the study of the particularity and complexity of a single case, coming to understand its activity within important circumstances” (Stake 1995, p.11). The case study used in landscape architecture is “a well-documented and systematic examination of the process, decision making and outcomes of a project, which is undertaken for the purpose of informing future practice, policy, theory, and/or education” (Francis, 2001, p.19). According to Stake (1995) and other

researchers, the instrumental case study is research into a particular case to gain an understanding of other factors that can help the researcher to understand and gain additional insight into research questions.

The case study method is used in this study in order to be specific about cultural practices in open space, and in order to locate in fabric and form the investigation and study of open spaces and social life in Jeddah. The use of such case studies will assist in obtaining a firm understanding of how the use of physical spaces is related to people's sense of place attachment and the pattern of using open spaces (Stake, 1995).

The researcher has relied in order to conduct his research of the results he gets from the case study and data he was able to collect. He has collected the data through surveys and direct interviews with groups of people at the open places. The results obtained he led him to conclude that there is an correlation between how people feel about certain place and the way they are using such place. (Stake, 1995).

As known, availability of sufficient number of case studies provides a good data base that the researcher can depend on. De Vaus (2001) recommended that the research shall relied on more than one case study that will provide the researcher will several sources of knowledge allowing him to understand the subject from several aspects, while deepening on a single case study may divert from the well analyze of the research subject. On the other hand Yin (1994) argued that relying on well-designed case study in enough. But according to De Vaus he found that researches that relied on multiple case studies have a superiority when comparing with researches that has relied on single case study. Hence, the method that will be applied in this research will be the multiple case studies in order to make sure of diversity of data available and strengthen the accuracy if results obtained. Using multiple case studies will allow to overcome the demographical differences impacts at several locations. Each case study has been well analyzed in order to make sure of the proper of the data collected which is used on comparison with other cases later on. All case studies was made at the urban context of Jeddah. In this research the researcher has selected five different open spaces located at Jeddah. The aim of diversity was to cover the different cultures and natures of residents at these different places. The common usages of the available open spaces was playgrounds of children and other usages which is mainly based on the religious and social factors that is widely widespread among the residents of these areas.

This section indicated the need of applying case study approach within his study. However, there was a need to examine users behavior, activities and social interaction in the selected open spaces. Because of that it was important to imply observational method to record the behavior, activities and social interaction that will assist to frame the findings for this study. The case studies integrated data collection from observations and from on-site interviews. The following section will introduce the used method

4.7 Observation

Table 4-4 Summary of the methods for open spaces observation

Selection Criteria	Method
Activities	Observation – Taking notes
Data collected	Photos – notes – transcripts
Time Scale	From January – May 2016
Objectives met	B,C and D

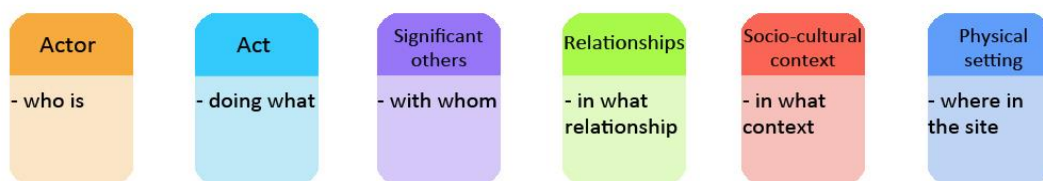
The researches about the urban spaces is characterized by the rely on visual observations to collect the data and make required comparisons. (Zeisel, 1981) believe the visual observations and gathering data through the observation is the approach fit to conduct researches about urban spaces. Cullen (1961) has succeeded to obtain reliable results in his research relying on the visual observations about subjects of his research. The results obtained by these researches verify that gathering data through visual observation is an appropriate manner for these researches conducting about the urban environments. This research is considered a simulation form for the research conducted by Loukaitou- Sideris (1992) since the method for collecting data will be observing the users of these spaces without intruding their privacy (Table 4-4).

"When you observe behavior, you soon become aware of repetitive activities in identifiable places. Place-specific activities within such a pattern are more closely related to one another than to patterns of activities in other places. In different socio-cultural and physical settings the same behavior can have different design implications" (Zeisel, 1981, p114). Observation could show how people behave and use their environment, so that behavior patterns provide clues to explain these. In addition, observation helps to determine the number of people, management, activities, spatial and temporal distributions and length of stay in a specific open space.

Observed behavior patterns pose questions for the researcher, such as why a particular pattern of behavior took place at a specific location, such as seating spot or using a particular place.

According to Zeisel (1981), the key elements in the observation of environmental behaviour are listed as follows:

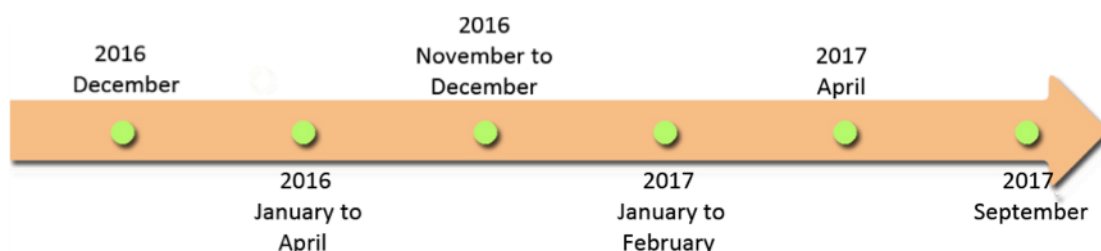
Figure 4 - 3: Key elements in the observation adopted from (Zeisel, 1981)



Source: The Researcher 3

A number of factors, including users’ demographic factors, the selection of seating areas, the circulation and movements of users, site planning and design, social interactions and their classification, how space is used and whether or not the design of the site assists and is beneficial to space users were observed within existing open recreational patterns. Weather, time, people type and gender, environment, locations, movements and activities were also recorded by the researcher. During the data-gathering period for this research observations were made at different periods of time, and during numerous visits in the following time period:

Figure 4 - 4: Observation periods



Source: The Researcher

In order to increase the data availability and to support his arguments about his observations, the researcher has decided to take some photos of the places as a sort of documenting his findings. While this way has been proven to be a good way to enhance the researching process, there were some obstacles that the researcher have, among these obstacles are:

The Saudi society is a Conservative society; no one will accept the concept that a researcher takes photos of his wife and children for researching purposes. Even though some people may not reject this idea. Taking photos of someone without obtaining his prior approval is considered a breaching of people's privacy (Alderson, 2004). This may be a reason for bringing an action against the researcher. This couldn't be a serious matter if the research is conducted in other society other than the Saudi society. Anyhow, the researcher has used some techniques to take the photos from far distance and try not to take photos of faces.

The aim of the research is to obtain a closer view of the open spaces and the usage of these spaces by the residents. In order to achieve this objective the researcher needed to make observations about the usage of these places at different times to observe the variation. He has visited these open spaces at six different times during the year to cover almost all day events. The diversity of time is expected to give a larger view of the activities participated. At these phases the researchers went to these places and take some quick notices about the activities and the persons visiting these places to get a better view about their cultures and their standard of living as well.

In order to collect the proper data needed for the research the researcher has make some written notices about the typology of the activities at these spaces. He has relied on the model of elements that has been developed by Zeisel. In order to have a better understanding of the place, the researcher has relied on the designs and charts of these places that show the design and the suggested activities. In order to avoid the common mistakes that he may face while collecting and coding the data.

While the visual observations and written notices are reflecting the typology of these open spaces, there is still lack of information about the reason of selecting these places to practice these activities while they maybe similar spaces with same design but no one is practicing the same activities there. This is why the researcher think his data won't be sufficient without enhancing the findings he may got by opinions of the people practicing these activities. This is why he begins to enhance his views by holding some interviews with people he met at these places.

4.8 Interviews

The researcher has relied on two basic types of the interview, the direct interview where he met the interviewee at the open space area (the subject of the research) and begin to ask him the prearranged questions to collect the required data and the office interview where he ask some of the visitors to arrange a meeting at the office for more detailed interview (Table 4-5).

Direct and office interviews were arranged in a manner that gives the interviewee freedom and support concerned the asked question (open ended question) and also in some cases the researcher has relied on asking further questions to make a better understanding for the interviewee about the meaning of the question asked in order to get more reliable answers (Table 4-6). This type of interviews is called a semi-structured interviews and it aims to get the most accurate data out of the questions replies. (Banister et al., 1994, p51).

The researcher has relied on the interview organizing techniques that has been (Kvale & Brinkmann, 2009; Willig, 2001). Since, he depend on make a correlation between all the questions asked and in some cases he added some additional question that allow him to understand the reason behind the

response " these questions are mainly asked when the interviewee replies with yes or no without explaining the reason of his selection". (Kvale and Brinkmann, 2009).

Table 4-5 Summary of the methods for open spaces user’s interviews.

Selection Criteria	Method
Activities	Semi-Structured interviews – Taking notes
Data collected	Photos – notes – transcripts
Time Scale	From January – May 2016
Objectives met	B,C and D

Table 4-6 Summary of the methods for practitioner’s interviews

Selection Criteria	Method
Activities	Semi-Structured interviews – Taking notes
Data collected	Photos – notes – transcripts
Time Scale	From January – May 2017
Objectives met	B,C and D

4.8.1 On-Site Interviews

The researcher has organized the interview according to the storytelling interview model which allows the interviewer to direct the attention of the interviewee about the various aspects of the subject which in turn enrich the awareness of the interviewee about the points and subjects that need his clarification. The descriptive approach applied in the research has allowed the researcher to identify the feelings of the sample group (the interviewee) about the spaces located at Jeddah where he conducted his research about. (Manzo, 2005, p. 74).

As aforementioned, the questions of the interviews were prepared in a manner allowing the interviewee to understand the issue he is asked about with some supplementary questions that may be asked to add more clarification to the points or to obtain more information about certain points. The researcher has relied on both open-ended and closed question to achieve the objective of the interviews held (Gillham, 2000). In order to avoid any misunderstanding of the questions asked the researcher has translated the question into Arabic with taking into the consideration the variation of the culture. Most of the interviews were held informally with the visitors at these open spaces (Rubin and Rubin, 1995); although the researcher has relied on diversity when setting the questions on the interview. There is still a lack of a full view due to the inability to held interviews with non-visitors of the open spaces where he conducted his research at. The researcher shall obtain a certain level of interview skills to be able to extract the data from the narrative replies of some questions Bazeley (2007) he shall also be aware of the impact of cultural variations on the perspectives of interviewee

Most of the interviews were held with the visitors on site. There were no any arrangements before the interviewer and interviewee before the time of the interview. Holding interviews onsite have superiority over the other methods of interviews that may be held at offices as the researcher will be able to make a benefit of recognizing the interaction between the visitor and the surrounding elements existing at the open spaces. Also this allow the researcher to recognize the behavior of the visitor at the open space, all these variables enhance the researching process and allow the researcher to get more accurate data (Rishbeth, 2013).

As most of the interviews were held at the open spaces where the researcher met the visitors and begin to list the interview questions and collect their answers. This has added another burden to the researching process, the Saudi traditions and social customs doesn't recognize talking freely to strangers especially if the talking was about some private issues. Hence, the researcher had to be careful concerning the process of interview and avoid to add any load if he felt the interviewee would like to keep his experience as personal matter or don't like to share particular data or stories. (Rishbeth, 2013).

Holding the interviews at the site has proven its' superiority concerning the accuracy of data and enhancing the researcher abilities to discover the interaction and emotions that reflect the relation between the visitor and the place. But on the other side there were also some disadvantages for this method. In most cases the surrounding noises has contributed in distracting the visitor and impact his concentration. Which in turn impact his replies and the data that will be extracted from these replies as well.

The most important interviewing skill that the interviewer shall have is the ability to ask the supportive questions. These types of question are considered as a guide to the interviewee who can't express all their thoughts and feelings without getting some aids or questions about it. The researcher has set a certain amount of flexibility at the model of the interview to be able to revise or add some directive questions if needed. He relied on this technique to enlarge the benefit obtained by holding the interviews and reduce the impact of personal differences that may impact the quality of data collected.

Most of the participants in the interviews were Saudi citizens; this is why all the questions and sheets were translated into Arabic. There was only one American participant and the interview was held with him in English language. And some interviewee from other nationalities and they have also chosen to held the interview in English language. The researcher has filled their replies in the same language of the interview.

The researcher has handled the issues of social barriers in a qualified manner as he was aware of the barriers he may face during holding the interview. He was keen to comply with all social standards related to the appearance and the way to deal with the visitors during all stages of his researching process.

4.8.2 Practitioners Interviews

The researcher at the phase of collecting data for his study believed it wouldn't be sufficient to collect data from a single source which is the visitors only. He has expanded the sources to include engineers and employees at Jeddah municipality and other sectors that were responsible for the arrangements and establishment of the open spaces facilities and also applying the plans set for improving and maintaining these places.

4.8.3 Informed Interview Consent

On the opposite of the case of interviews with visitors where the researcher had to make all interviews in an informal manner, the interviews with formal personnel shall be held after informing the personnel with all details and get his prior written approval to held the interview and also the research shall inform the personnel with the objective of data collected. Wiles et al. (2006)

4.9 Transcribing

Since most of the interviews are held orally and in some cases the researcher record the interview, the researcher may later on need to shift some of these audio into texts, this is one of the process needed to refine the data collected and to decide which part of it is relevant to the research and which parts aren't Kvale & Brinkmann (2009) and Denscombe (1998). While most of the interviews are held with Saudi citizens so it was recommended that the transcribing to be done by the researcher and not through outsourcing entity as he is more familiar with the events and surrounding environment at time where the interviews were held.

4.10 Photographs

Since the research is about the open spaces at Jeddah and the usage of these spaces, the research needs to get some photos of these area, as these photos will enhance the data collected and results obtained (Zeisel, 1981). The research has relied on two sources to get the photos needed. The first one was the direct photos that he takes at these areas to document the interaction with the visitors

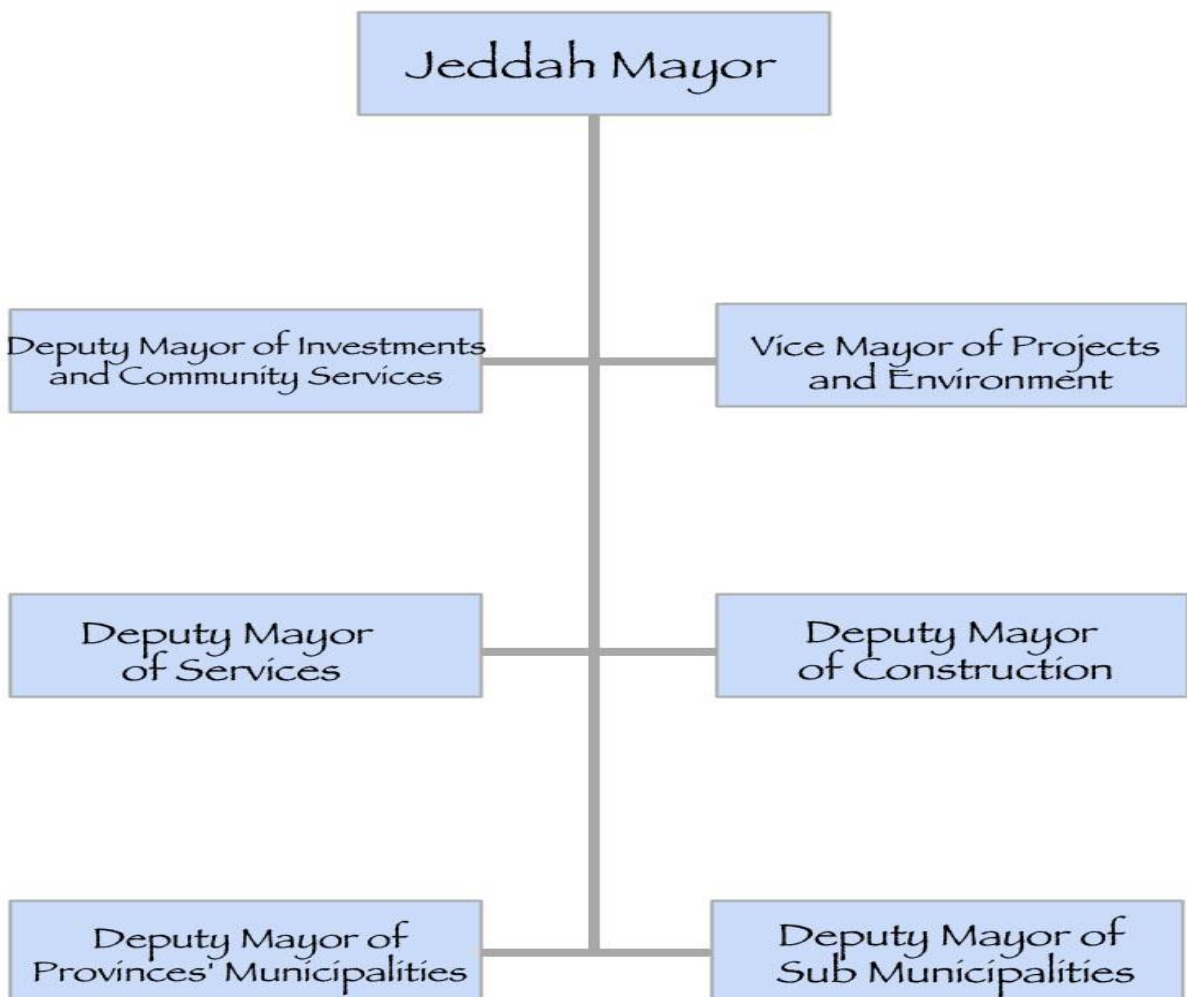
and activities practiced. The second source was Google map photos that show the design and directions of these open spaces.

4.11 Studying The Role Of Government In The Planning, Design And Management Of Open Public Spaces.

since this research studies public spaces in Jeddah city, it was important to study the government role and involved departments in creating and forming the master plan of Jeddah city that will include producing public spaces, by studying maps and literature that focuses in about this matter.

Moreover, it is important to consider that ‘technical and diagrammatic perspectives’ are sufficient for dealing with the complicatedness of social and urban issues. According to Lange (2005), Madanipour (2010), Punter (2010), and others, improving the design features of public spaces necessitates the development of a practical scheme which meets people’s needs and complies with the socio-cultural, spatial, and political perspectives which are associated with the creation of public space and the planning of residential areas and their features.

Figure 4-5 Map of the organizational structure of Jeddah Municipality (involved in public spaces)



Jeddah Municipality Departments Concerned Open Public Spaces

Projects And Environment Sector:

- 1- General Directorate Of Lighting And Electricity.
 - . Lighting Implementation And Rehabilitation.
 - . Lighting Maintenance Management.
- 2- General Directorate Of Control.
 - . Environmental Projects Control Department.
 - . Operation And Maintenance Control Department.
- 3- General Directorate Of Operation And Maintenance.
 - . Gardens Department.
- 4- General Directorate Of Studies And Designs.
 - . Facilities Studies Department.
 - . Development Projects Studies Department.
- 5- General Directorate Of Waterfront And Facilities .
 - . Management Of Quality Gardens.
 - . Facility Management.
- 6- General Directorate Of Hygiene.
 - . Hygiene Management.
- 7- Project Management Office.

Construction Agency:

- 1- General Directorate Of Urban Planning.
 - . Department Of Urban Studies.
- 2- General Directorate Of Urban Development.
 - . City Planning Department.
- 3- Department Of Urban Design.

Investment Agency And Community Service:

- 1- General Directorate Of Investment Contracts.
 - . Investor Relations Management.
 - . Investment Projects Follow-Up Department.
- 2- General Administration For Community Service.
 - . Department Of Cultural Activities And Exhibitions.
 - . Social Responsibility Management And Facilities Care.

Services Agency:

- 1- General Directorate For Monitoring Municipal Achievement.
 - . Investors Licenses Management.

Sub - Municipalities Agency:

1. General Directorate Of Monitoring Environment.
 - . Optimize Visual Scene Department.

Provincial Municipalities Agency:

- 1- General Directorate Of Projects.
 - . Project Studies Management.
 - . Project Supervision Department.

2. General Directorate Of Urban Planning.
- . Local Planning Department.

Figure 4-6 Government departments involved in public spaces



Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs



Ministry of Finance



Ministry of Economy and Planning



Ministry of Social Affairs



Jeddah Development & Urban Regeneration



Jeddah Municipality

4.12 Sampling size

Determining the sample size is one of the issues that shall be well considered by the researcher in order to make sure that the number of the group sample isn't lower than needed and in this case the data collected wouldn't be sufficient and that will impact the results of the research and also the sample group shall not be so large especially if the replies obtained will be similar as this may lead to double work and time wasting for the researcher. (Onwuegbuzie & Leech, 2007).

Curtis et al. (2000), has another opinion concerning the sample size as he believe it shall be determined according to the researcher perspective and there is no such certain constant rules that is supposed to control the process of sampling size determining.

The sampling size was a critical issue that has gained the interest of several scholars. But the most particular similarity between all views is that the main factor impacting the sampling size is the subjective of the interviews. Kuzel (1992) believes that it will be sufficient to collect data from 6-8

sources if the hypotheses and aspects of the research were homogenous. Morse (1994) believes that the appropriate sample size in case of conducting a research that is based on interviews as source of data shall be about 30-50 interviews. While Kvale and Brinkman (2009) demonstrates that the large number of interviews may not add any valuable data and may lead to wasting the researcher efforts and time.

The researcher has reviewed several previous studies that discuss the issue of sampling size. According to the findings he get he decided to set the sampling size of his research to be collected from 5 sources (open spaces) located at different locations at Jeddah and the sample group was consisted on 85 persons.

In order to achieve the required diversity of data collected, the researcher has conducted 17 interviews at each selected location. He intended to cover various genders, age group and cultures at each location in order to make sure of having a wider view on the opinions of the visitors and also to avoid the meaningless duplication of views and opinions.

The researcher has also relied on interviewing several nationalities and not only the Saudi citizens. He has preferred to achieve the demographic diversity through interviewing both genders and all age group and to enlarge the diversity of data collected he has also held some interviews with other nationalities.

4.13 Data analysis

Most of the interviewee was Saudi citizens; this is why all interviews were in Arabic, except few cases that were held in English language. All the interviews have been converted into texts by the researcher in order to check the relevant of the responses to research aspects and extract required data.

Carrying out an interview is an essential phase at the process of collecting data that need a special concern about the researcher in order to achieve the planned objective. (Wengraf, 2001, p28). The researcher was awarded of this issue. He has make a checklist to evaluate the results obtained from the interview that has been applied on each finished interview to check if everything is going well or the questions shall be revised. The main points of concern that the researcher tried to cover through transcribing the interviews were the impressions and opinions. In some cases the researcher has found it necessary to perform a paraphrase of some questions as he felt that the responses aren't relevant to the objective of the asked question. So, he thought that rephrasing the questions will make the questions closer to the idea.

After collecting all related data and convert it into texts the researcher has moved to the next step

which is analyzing collecting data. He has relied on “**Nvivo software**” in order to make the required coding of data collected.

After converting the oral interview into texts the researcher shall pay attention to the difference between the audio and text material when presenting to the reader (Wengraf, 2001, p28). It’s essential when recording the data to differentiate between the data and the narrative speeches (Mason, 2002). All data collected was orally about impressions and other aspects that describe the open spaces. Codes were used to give more explanation of the data and divide them into sections such like values, impressions... etc.

Through the data analysis the researcher was able to divide them into seven factors as illustrated in the following tables.

For the same idea you may have several opinions, the opinion here is based on the perspective of the source of data (in our case the interviewees.) (Bazeley, 2007), this is why it was essential for the researcher to conduct data transcript and translation himself. If another party is appointed to carry out these tasks the results may varied.

At the beginning of the coding transitions the researcher has use the free nodes which means that each opinion or idea isn’t linked to specific node yet. Then the nodes has been collected and structured into hierarchy that supports to identify the relationship between each node and the others.

Bazely (2007), urged that using the coding system shall be characterized by flexibility. Since the researcher may discover some issues that is less significant after beginning the coding process. He shall have a sufficient amount of flexibility to spot some items he believe they are vital and will impact the research results and ignore some points that he believe it won’t impact the research.

After conducting the process of coding the researcher was able to split the findings he could collect about the usage of the open spaces at Jeddah into four main sectors. The codes he used were: Memory, Health, Escape and Social Life.

Table 4 - 8: Extensive landscape sites sampling size details

Themes	Themes related to Social life
Concept and codes generated from the interviews and observations	Interacting Communicating with others Social acceptance Social rejection Every day visit

	Making friends Playing with children privacy
Proposed themes for the findings	Social life within open spaces

Table 4 - 9: Intensive landscape sites sampling size details

Themes	Activities & Facilities	Value	Problems
Concept and codes generated from the interviews and observations	Bring furniture Buy food Eating Playground Shopping Sport - exercise Swimming Waiting Mosques Playgrounds WC Kiosks	Exciting Fear Happy Interacting and communication Psychological comfort and relaxing Safety (physical safety) Social acceptability	Dirtiness and cleanness Facilities Lack of parking Lack of seats Lack of WC Lack of playground Location Maintenance Social context Safety Security
Proposed themes for the findings	Patterns of using open spaces	Value and quality of places	Barriers and frustrations

4.14 Reflection on methodology and cultural context

The approaches and techniques that were used by the researcher to conduct this research has been mainly innovated to be complied with Western societies values. While this research was conducted at Arabian, Muslim society. Although some of the participants were happy to make their contributions in this work and they reflect their hopes that the research will achieve positive results and contribute in improving and developing the open spaces at Jeddah. There were also huge amount of obstacles especially concerning taking the photos of the visitors which weren't accepted by some of them and also holding the interviews with some conservative families. The researcher has appoint a female assistant to help them concerning this issue.

4.15 Summary

The main aim of the previous chapter was to highlight the approaches that the researcher has followed and applied through the study and also the main objective of the research. As we can observe the illustration of the approaches has led to understanding the social aspects of the society where the research is conducted at which is the Saudi society. The selected techniques for data collection and data analysis have contributed in enhancing the understanding of the interaction between Saudi citizens and open spaces at Jeddah.

In the previous pages, we have demonstrated the stages of the research and how each stage was performed. In the following we are going to discuss the results and findings that have been obtained through analyzing the collected data.

CHAPTER FIVE

MASTER PLANNING AND ITS RELATION TO THE CREATION OF PUBLIC SPACE IN JEDDAH CITY:

CHAPTER FIVE

MASTER PLANNING AND ITS RELATION TO THE CREATION OF OPEN SPACE IN JEDDAH CITY

5.1 Introduction

It is noticeable that the management of the urban development process carried out in the city has not been impacted by urbanization and modernization in a positive manner. Moreover, national programs have been fragmented. In addition, there has been noticeably a sort of institutional fragmentation in policies, which have been incorporated into the national policy and 'the practices related to urban management' which are carried out locally. There should be appropriate quick positive reactions to newly emerging and changeable needs, which might be brought about by the prescriptive rules incorporated into the Master Planning Approach. One of the serious problems is the reliance on geometric plans as well as technically generated plans, which result in difficulty in the creation of public space. This chapter is divided into 4 main segments. The first section is aimed at explaining how the emergence of the Jeddah Master Plan has resulted in raising questions with regard to the possibility that technically-generated open spaces could be compatible with their users and context. The second section is aimed at shedding light on the creation of public space within residential Areas located in modern neighborhoods. The third section is aimed at clarifying the latest initiatives taken by (the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs) for the purpose of enhancing the provision and development of public space and the level of areas where there are high rates of residence. The last section reviews the features of public spaces in modern neighborhoods in Jeddah.

5.2 The Introduction of the Jeddah Master Plan

According to what has been mentioned before, over many years after the destruction of the City Wall in the year 1947, there was wide-scale serious destruction in Jeddah city. The authorities of municipal developed and put into action very important physical planning schemes for the purpose of completely changing the shape and form of the city. The establishment of two main roads "the Mecca and Medina roads" resulted in the establishment of residential areas with remarkably high income along both highways towards the end of the 1940s. Additionally, the urban planners perceived Al-Sabeel³⁶ District, which is located in the southeast of the town, as a region for hosting immigrants receiving a low income. Accordingly, the basic social characteristics of the city were nearly totally planned in detail. The First Master Plan of Jeddah was in (1959-1963) by Dr. Abdurrahman Makhlof.

³⁶ Al-Sabeel one of the areas of Jeddah, characterized by crimes, immigrants, poverty and neglect

Based on this plan, families achieving 'high income' settle in the north and east of the city, whereas families achieving 'low income' settle in the south of the city. The following phases of urban development seemed to echo this social geography model (Fadan 1977; Bokhari 1978; Daghistani 1991).

The year 1973 witnessed a great increase in the rate of urban growth. This event required the first official master plan should be approved. This plan was developed by an efficient global consultancy consortium which was led by two partners named 'Johnson Marshall' and 'Robert Mathew'. Obviously, the master plan was perceived as an intrinsic device which should be utilized for regulating the process of urban development and controlling other areas located in the suburbs where small-sized populations exist. Another objective of the master plan was reducing the appearance of homes inhabited by squatters, particularly in the south of the city. These homes were established at a fast pace for hosting a big number of expatriates. This issue exceeded the expectations and vision of the original consultant (Alharbi 1989; Al-Ghamdi 1996; Al-Hemaidi 2001).

According to the recommendations and suggestions incorporated into the master plan, some sections of the old structure of the city have been intentionally damaged, and high towers located in landscaped parkland have been established instead. In addition, the streets with narrow width have been broadened in order to facilitate the movement of vehicles. Also, numerous ring roads have been set up around the city along with a new broad network of several kinds of pathways such as highways. This network has been aimed at linking the city with rural areas. As a result, within a short duration, the shape of the city was totally changed into an extremely large network based on the grid. This was a very important phase which has paved the way for setting a basis for expanding urban and suburban developments carried out in the future. This has resulted in the appearance of new types of discrimination and fracture across the structure of the city. Several other aspects have led to the development of new areas for residence in the outskirts of the city such as their low costs, absence of pollution, and the presence of basic services and facilities; however, the impact of motor vehicles has led to the emergence of an ugly and poorly planned area (Jenaideb 1993; Al-Otaibi 2006).

In the old structure of Jeddah city, discrimination was not a characteristic of urban society. Moreover, spatial grouping based on social status was nearly absent (Sijeeni 1995; Mortada 2003). Upon the creation of the car and its use in residential areas, the prevailing purity of these areas has been negatively affected. Additionally, the traditional culture and behaviors in the streets have been distorted, and the identity of the local community has been gradually destroyed (Adas 2001). In light of the establishment of newly planned roads, the existing link among communities gradually disappeared as the members of these communities separated and went into various parts of the city and accordingly stayed isolated from each other. The dispersion of people into different roads was for avoiding the traffic problem on the streets around them. The network or system of transportation was

developed according to the Standard of Spatial Planning. These standards associated with planning had an effect at various levels. The effect varied according to the population size in each area and the common social class existing in each area. Specific planning criteria were applied to the development process of new residential areas including Prince Fawaz Corporate Housing³⁷. Such developments were implemented based on the level of approachability, living standard, numbers of existing buildings, and the types of available housing. The establishment of this project and other projects associated with the same objectives around the old structure of the city has resulted in a fracture in the urban structure. As a result, this has resulted in wider-scale social mobility and gap between the high social classes and the low classes (Berger and Luckmann 1964). Planning criteria constituted the main factor which resulted in the emergence of communities characterized by economic homogeneity, totalitarianism, and metropolitanism. Thus, the social gap and stratification became more obvious (Madanipour 2003a).

Concerning the creation of public space and relevant facilities for enjoyment and recreation, the master plan was developed and accompanied by a number of action plans developed for the purpose of providing more useful recommendations and methods for developing and modernizing the city. In this regard, several recreational areas such as malls and playgrounds have been established across the city for the purpose of making the city more beautiful and promoting the municipality's significant role. According to the master plan, 5 major kinds of public open space have been discovered. The first kind is tremendous city areas for recreation and enjoyment such as the Corniche Area³⁸ as well as the revival of public spaces found in the old structure of the market. The second kind is the street-and-traffic large roads. The third kind is huge city parks such as Khuzam Garden³⁹ and the area allocated for Prayer Ground where Jeddah's Eid Festival is carried out. This area is estimated at 5 hectares across Mecca Road to the eastern segment of the city. The fourth kind is local public spaces which are developed in the residential areas. The fifth kind is the spaces created in specific places such as spaces created in shopping centers for eating food. The sections below present a summarized explanation of the creation of public spaces as well as recreational areas.

5.2.1 The Revival of the Historic Structure of the City and its Public Spaces

The historic structure of Jeddah City constitutes a great model of architecture in addition to the urban structure located on the Red Sea. Also, it constitutes an excellent model for the Arabian Peninsula as it is a region where homes and markets with traditional features still involve the features of urban heritage. These heritage-related features are associated with the typical characteristics of an Arabo-Islamic city. The area of the historic structure of Jeddah is estimated at 1.5 square km. Within this

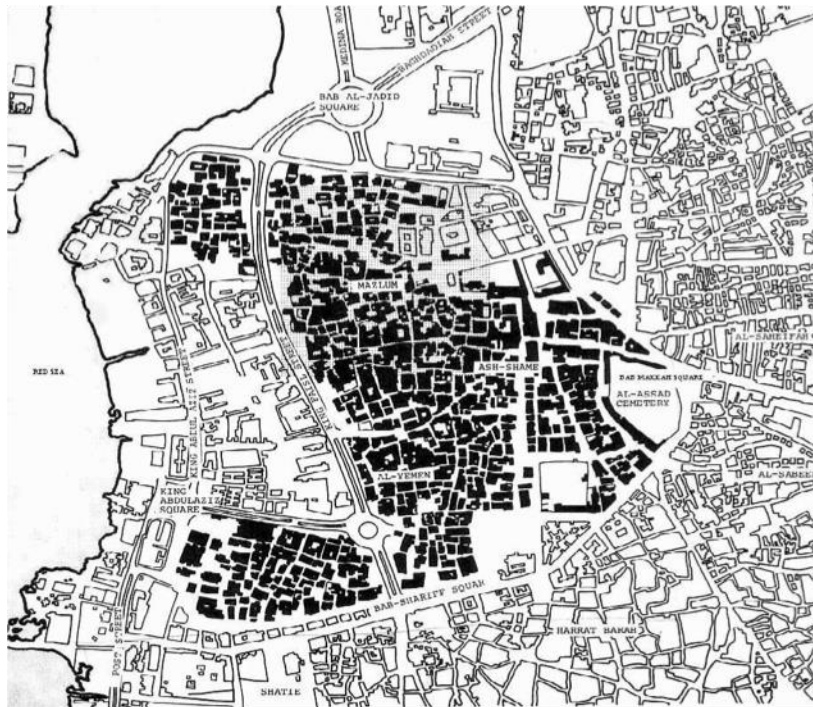
³⁷ Prince Fawaz housing: a residential area, built in the mid-seventies with special specifications and standards, to meet the needs of the population, but it is now one of the worst areas in Jeddah.

³⁸ The Jeddah Corniche is the 30 km coastal resort area of the city of Jeddah. Located along the Red Sea, the Corniche features a coastal road, recreation areas, pavilions and large-scale civic sculptures.

³⁹ Khuzam Garden ne of Jeddah's large and old gardens, it is also located in the south of the city

structure, there were 3 residential areas that were protected by the Huge City Wall. According to aerial photographs which were captured prior to the destruction of the Wall in the year 1947, the city included 4 main roads through which the majority of traffic crossed. These roads were connected to the outside in a direct manner via the 5 main gates of the city. Different public institutions and buildings such as educational institutions, mosques, stores, and government facilities were built in big numbers along these main roads (Figure 5-1).

Figure 5-1 The Plan of the Old Structure of Jeddah, displaying the urban structure of the city and the interaction of the void and solid in architecture



Source: Fadan 1983.

It is noticeable that the residential areas witness an irregularity and narrowness of the roads and alleys. The narrowness of these roads and alleys is estimated at 7 feet. These roads are regarded as the main medium of local movement and a channel for entering the residential areas, where some public access is possible. In other words, these roads represent a broad network connecting streets where pedestrians move and specific-community spaces. In general, public spaces, which are developed in the form of commercial streets and alleyways, constitute major places for gatherings and the organization of social occasions, religious ceremonies, and night festivals. The majority of the old structures of the city involve residential houses which are made up of 2 to 4 floors. The windows of these houses are made of wood, which is aimed at enabling home residents to observe people walking in the streets and at the same time providing a good level of privacy for residents (Figure 5-2).

Figure 5-2: Old Buildings in Jeddah in the Past



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

The method of organizing these buildings has made social relationships stronger and bonds among neighbors more intimate. Such buildings and structures easily promote social contact and enable neighbors to gather every day. Thus, this residential environment helps to trigger warm feelings of safety and protection against strange people. Along with the wooden windows installed in old buildings, other main characteristics were associated with the city. These characteristics made the city unique at the physical level; furthermore, they added a special identity to the city. Examples of these features are mosques⁴⁰, market areas having roofs made of wood and existing until now, the covered bazaars, and the mansions of merchants (Figure 5-3).

Figure 5-3: Displaying Jeddah's major market area during the 1920s



Source: (Stacey-International 1982).

⁴⁰ A mosque (in Arabic language masjid), is a place of worship for Muslims.

Prior to the destruction of the City Wall in the year 1947, extended families settled in the residential buildings having traditional structures. Upon the great urban growth in Jeddah which was supported by the implementation of tremendous urban development, the local residents decided to abandon these traditional buildings so as to settle in the suburbs which were newly developed. Currently, the old houses in the city are majorly owned by foreign families achieving low income. Generally speaking, the old city has become a home for the class of laborers who can afford to pay its accommodation costs. Moreover, it has become a destination for establishing and launching local businesses. Upon the emergence of the materials used for establishing modern buildings during the 50s, the interest in establishing traditional houses made of coral limestone faded away. Also, the old structure of the city was no longer kept in good condition (Fadan 1977; Bokhari 1978; Jenaideb 1993; Sijeeni 1995; Adas 2001). Over the 70s, the Municipality of Jeddah entered into an agreement with the British Architectural Firm led by Robert Matthew and Johnson Marshall so as to develop a plan aimed at protecting and reviving the historic area. This conservation plan constitutes an element of a wider-scale master plan which involves the city as a whole. The objective of this plan is the development of a totally well-organized city with historical features which can help to protect heritage from distortion or loss.

There are 2 main objectives associated with the conservation plan. The first objective is the protection of buildings associated with unique architectural features. This means that the original heights of old buildings should be revived and protected. Moreover, there should be more interest in reviving volumes within traditional buildings as well as façades and traditionally distinct landscapes. The second objective of the conservation plan is enhancing the features of the old urban structure by making its public spaces better. The reawakening of the traditional methods of construction could be implemented by relying on old craftsmen who are fully aware of these methods. Interestingly, the revival program has encompassed the establishment of a five-star hotel which has traditional architectural features. Also, the program has encompassed the improvement of traditional public spaces for the purpose of reviving traditional activities, hobbies, and habits carried out in traditional recreational places, such as traditional cafes⁴¹ and restaurants. Based on this, roads have been developed using marble and basalt slabs, and lampposts, greenery, benches, and fountains have been created in public places as a means of decoration (Bokhari 1978).

There has been a debate over the success or failure of the revival and protection of the old city. In this respect, some analysts such as Daghistani clarified in 1993 that the Master Plan Approach implemented in Jeddah City cannot be regarded as an absolute failure. He has believed that some remarkable successes arising from this master plan approach were obvious in several locations. In the point of view of Djamel Boussaa (2002), the conservation program incorporated into the master plan is regarded as a greatly important try to implement a preservation plan in a fast-paced growing

⁴¹ Traditional cafes : is a public place where people sit for coffee or tea, smoking shisha, usually designed with simple and traditional elements

city like Jeddah. Moreover, the establishment of remarkable architectural structures and the enhancement of relatedness among the surrounding projects paved the way for displaying a favorable image of the city, and thus, the historical city became an attractive destination to be visited (Boussaa 2002). In the point of view of Bokhari in 1983, the concern with the protection and revival of Old Jeddah was aimed at promoting the city's aesthetic value more than developing a suitable heritage management strategy which could have better helped to promote the city's soul and continuous growth. Additionally, there has been traffic congestion existing around the old town and arising from the absence of a well-developed road system. That is why the traffic movement has been out of control, and parking has been done randomly. Therefore, several people have become unmotivated to visit the central area.

In short, the preservation programs and schemes result in public spaces with an attractive appearance which influences visitors and investors to go to the city. As a result, this improvement in the appearance of the city and its structure has brought about great benefits in the entire society. By adopting well-planned urban design and management strategies, the municipality was capable of obtaining the essential support from the competent political and financial authorities for executing the project. Furthermore, the intensive attempts of the municipality to enhance the awareness of the significance of reviving the unlikeness of the structures and buildings of the historical city have been beneficial and influential. Currently, in light of the great increase in the material value of lands, the old structures of buildings are regularly replaced with new buildings which are high-rise. Accordingly, supporting and proceeding with preservation programs necessitate a comprehensive scheme of urban design which is expected to bridge the gap between the principles of preservation and modernization so that the old and new architectural structures can coexist within the city (Bentley 1983).

5.2.2 The Role of Street Network as Main Public Space

According to what has been mentioned above, the late 1950s witnessed an aggravation of traffic congestion which had been a dangerous issue in Jeddah City. Accordingly, the municipality introduced an initial traffic plan for the purpose of supporting the establishment of 2 main roads linking the city with Mecca and Medina. Moreover, this traffic plan was aimed at broadening a number of the local roads existing in the old city. In accordance with this traffic scheme, the Master Plan developed in the year 1973 presented a thorough street network. The municipality has allocated huge budgets for the establishment of high-speed freeways and main roads to link the city with its suburbs as well as other cities. A massive amount of money has been allocated for building the recommended bridges, tunnels, underpasses, and ramps which are required for combining the systems of local streets with the high-speed expressways and eliminating the traffic congestion issue arising from the increasing numbers of vehicles. Significantly, the Master Plan presented the perfect model and guidance for utilizing lands and subdividing the lands of newly developed areas for residence. Fast-

paced and broad urbanization has taken place in the city, which has consequently resulted in an increase in the number of trips to urban regions. These trips are relatively haphazard in their organization and arrival across the city. According to this, the street structure has needed to embrace an effective arterial grid system so that it could greatly facilitate access to as many urban areas as possible, especially those areas with many cars used. It was also assumed that the arterial systems based on grids were the most appropriate model for the architectural features of newly developed areas for residents. Moreover, these systems have been expected to facilitate the performance of public services and the creation of main facilities in the future (Aziz Alrahman 1985; Montgomery 1986).

The development of the transportation system or network has remarkably resulted in the spread of urban growth on a large scale. In this regard, a big segment of residents and visitors are unhappy with the prevalent fragmentation in the city structure. Those residents and visitors do not believe in the traditional wisdom that developing an 'advanced' metropolis is strongly needed and essential. The development of the street network has brought about great changes in the form and physical features of the city. Additionally, this network has resulted in negative effects on the characteristics of public spaces within the city. The massive urban spaces designated for the establishment of the street network and the development of modern buildings have paved the way for new links between physical objects and the landscape existing around them. Within the structure of the old city, a minor segment of the urban structure or area was allocated for transportation management, which has consequently resulted in the existence of relatively narrow roads developed for the accommodation of pedestrians and car traffic. The establishment of the new street network in Jeddah has been aimed at the availability of broad streets so that the fast-paced increasing numbers of motor cars can move much more easily without causing traffic congestion.

According to the principles of the City Beautiful Movement with regard to the transformation of Paris and Athens, the Jeddah municipality's officials have declared and emphasized that they have been responsible for meeting the emerging demands associated with the modern life. These demands encompass the growing demand for new areas for residence and a new system for controlling motor traffic. For the purpose of improving the physical features of the city, the officials of the municipality have done their best to make streets beautiful and attractive by using historical sculptures, figures, and other decorative elements. Narrow pathways, winding passageways, and cramped residential areas have been replaced by broad and well-planned avenues and very large adorned roundabouts. Unfortunately, these changes distorted the features and identity of urban spaces which existed in the old city (Bokhari 1978).

At the environmental level, the establishment of main traffic roads including the Expressway linking Jeddah and Mecca brought about the obstruction of natural water channels, which consequently resulted in a decline in the environment. Additionally, the continuous frequent establishment of

buildings for residence in valleys exposed to fast flooding in the eastern section of the city has eliminated to the chances of providing good-level municipal services, especially drainage services. The ineffectiveness of the street network, as well as the poor control of city activities, became obvious on a broad scale, especially when Jeddah underwent a violent flash flood which particularly took place on November 25, 2009. Based on Arab News, this flood brought about more than 100 fatalities; moreover, nearly 8000 buildings were damaged, and nearly 5000 cars were devastated (Humaidan 4 December 2009). Upon this flood, it was concluded that the main reasons for this disastrous flood were the obstruction of the natural channel arising from the establishment of arterial grid streets, bridges, and areas for residence along with the non-existence of a suitable sewage system to deal with outflow and unexpected heavy rain or floods in addition to the non-existence of effective plans for managing disasters.

By analyzing the issue from spatial and functional perspectives, the buildings which are free-standing and located in the landscape along with a broad network of expressways, high ring roads, overpasses, and underground passageways led to the separation of the public and the absence of social intimacy or intimate relationships which were prevalent in the past. In the opinion of Roger Trancik (1986), this sort of urban development did not only distort the urban structure, but it also resulted in an increase in the lost spaces. These spaces are considered lost as they do not support the movement of pedestrians and do not help to promote social interaction because the newly developed roads have a single purpose that is moving and parking cars. In the opinion of Kunstler (1993), the excessive establishment of street networks within modern cities such as Jeddah has led to nothing but increasing social gap, isolation, and fracture. In Jeddah City, residents or visitors are unable to walk open spaces smoothly or flexibly as shopping malls, cafes, and restaurants are excessively placed on main streets with no, or a rare number of, pedestrian passageways. The difficulty in walking open spaces in Jeddah can be also attributed to the presence of several massive parking lots (Figure 5-4). Based on this, driving has become the only option to move from one place to another. This means that driving has negatively changed the existing public spaces into just areas of movement more than a medium of social interaction. As a result, this modern environment has led to the destruction of local communities, the bond among them, and their relative cultures (Sennett 1977).

Figure 5-4: The establishment of a vital street network in Jeddah



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

There are some experts who analyzed this issue from a socio-cultural perspective. In the opinion of Abdulla Bokhari (mentioned in 1978), the establishment of streets and roads in Jeddah has had negative effects on the maintenance and reflection of the true local culture including its beautiful principles and meanings. The conservative lifestyle is being swept away in light of the establishment of new broad streets including King Faysal Road⁴², which has necessitated the eradication of huge numbers of traditional houses and allowed the establishment of high-rise buildings according to international standards instead. In the opinion of Edward Relph (mentioned in 1989), the new urban development should be perceived as fragmented and incoherent. He expressed that replacing traditional architectural styles with international ones is a common characteristic of any cityscape, and this replacement reflects isolation and distortion. Furthermore, the establishment of new traffic systems including the high Mecca expressway, bridges, and tunnels has made traditional buildings seem isolated and abandoned. This opinion was expressed by John Gold in 2009. In fact, the modern city witnesses the presence of several unutilized spaces of ground between roads and buildings, and that is why isolation occurs. Unfortunately, traditional buildings are often attractive homes for poor expatriates, which finally makes these buildings and the surrounding areas ‘a home of unfamiliar people’s gatherings’. Therefore, social disintegration has occurred, and the original residents of old buildings have felt anxious and thus decided to escape to any other places.

From the point of view of Jane Jacob (mentioned in the year 1961) as well as other experts, modernist architectural movements in large cities have had undesired consequences. They believe that the execution of the Master Plan Approach in Jeddah for developing the city and revolutionizing its traffic system has resulted in the dislocation of old buildings to far spaces away from the center of the city in addition to the appearance of disintegrated urban spaces. This opinion was also supported

⁴² King Faysal Road in Jeddah is a major and vital road running from north to south, located in the south of Jeddah

by Venturi in 1966. Since the newly developed public spaces have been aimed at solely facilitating the movement and parking of motor vehicles, these spaces no longer act as media of social gatherings or interaction (Eben-Saleh, 2002). In the opinion of Rob Krier (1979), this carelessness or unawareness of the role of public spaces in reinforcing social integration and interactions particularly led to the destruction and distortion of urban space. According to what Richard Sennett mentioned in 1977, the newly developed public spaces have led to the destruction and distortion of public life and social values, resulting in a wide gap in the public domain, disfiguring close social relationships, and bringing about a serious social division and discrimination. Generally speaking, the majority of the present actions incorporated into the plan of developing Jeddah have been aimed at facilitating car movement rather than pedestrian movement. These developmental initiatives or plans have resulted in the production of huge empty spaces rather than spaces for social interactions. Experts see that the true needs and demands of local communities with regard to public spaces have not been taken into consideration.

5.2.3 The Improvement of the Corniche Area as a Major Recreational Destination

With regard to the creation of public spaces in large cities, there have been several plans aimed at this creation. One of these plans is the Master Plan, which was developed in the year 1973. This plan encompassed several objectives in connection with the execution of many projects. Examples of these projects are the Creek of Obhur⁴³ and the promotion of the Corniche Area near the beach, and the hilly areas in the east. These areas are considered sensitive at the environmental level. That is why urban developers should have taken into consideration the importance of leaving valleys empty so that they can play the role of channels for dealing with floodwater which might emerge adjacent to the hilly areas, where residential buildings and other types of buildings have been regularly established.

The Creek of Obhur was developed for the purpose of being a main recreational area, which the public can benefit from. Since the 1960s, the appearance of the beach area became distorted and relatively unreachable. Unfortunately, this area was not relevant to public use anymore. The reason for this is that huge segments of the beach area were utilized for the establishment of profit-making projects such as tourist hotels, luxury centers, and villas. It has been necessary to relocate the huge open space, which existed among areas for residence and whose area is estimated at more than 26000 acres. It was suggested to carry out the relocation on a massive segment of the grounds of old airports. According to what was mentioned by Abdulla Bokhari in 1978, city lands were not effectively utilized and controlled. Accordingly, the majority of the natural areas of Jeddah were not effectively kept in good condition.

⁴³ Creek of Obhur is a creek located on the eastern side of the Red Sea, placed 40 km on the northern section of the city. The creek is a popular place for Red Sea marinas.

For the purpose of promoting the establishment of the recommended recreational areas and the effective creation and utilization of public spaces in Jeddah, the master plan, which was outlined in 1973, was accompanied by a number of well-developed action plans. These action plans included the creation of the Corniche Area and the Red Sea Coastal Park (Figure 5-5). The execution of these projects was associated with the objective of facilitating public access to the waterfront of the coast, particularly upon the attainment of the Creek of Obhur by private urban developers. One of the action plans included a recommendation with regard to increasing the width of the current Corniche Road so that it could be a two-way coastal way. Achieving this action plan could be possible by extending the coastal line into the sea along the reef flats and acquiring legal rights from some institutions.

The former mayor of Jeddah, Mohammed Farsi (his official employment duration: 1981-87), was willing to undertake the responsibility of supervising and monitoring the process of urban development carried out in Jeddah City. He did his best to develop the Corniche Area and execute several recreational projects and good-looking boulevards. He additionally aimed to achieve the revival of the old structures of the city. Besides, he supervised the establishment of a group of comprehensive building projects which echoed the principles of the City Beautiful Movement. This movement has become prevalent in Jeddah since the last two decades of the twentieth century. The primary purpose of designing and executing the Corniche Area was recreation. Visiting the Corniche Area means being involved in public life and its features, and it also helps to pursue special personal emotions and feelings through being exposed to the seaside physically and visually. Mohamed Farsi was influenced by an urban developer named Daniel Burnham who adopted the impressive style of the Beaux Arts architecture and incorporated it into the Chicago Plan developed in the year 1909. That is why Farsi was keen on the creation of an organized city which reflects eye-catching images and expresses true cultural values. Being influenced by Burnham, Farsi emphasized that improving the appearance and environment of the city was essential in order to encourage people to maintain the generally accepted morals and perform their communal responsibilities (Smith, 2006).

Figure 5-5: The establishment of a vital street network in Jeddah

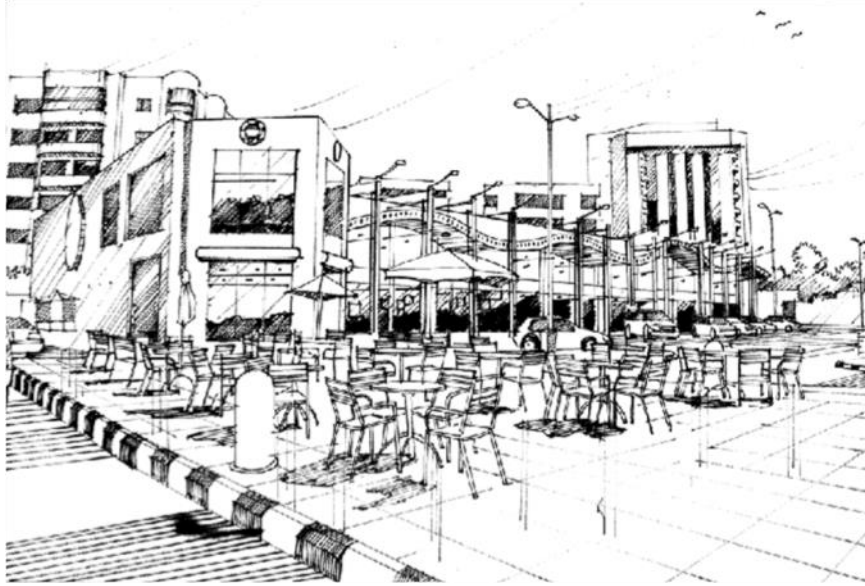


Source: Jeddah Municipality.

There has been a controversy over the success of the Corniche Development Project. In the opinion of Daghistani (1993) and other analysts evaluating the project from a macro-spatial planning perspective, executing the project of the Corniche Area Development should be perceived as an effective attempt to implement a number of the recommendations incorporated into the master plan. They additionally see that, regardless of the appropriateness of the features of the urban design incorporated into the project, the project has remarkably helped to support the public realm, encourage long-term private investments, and provide many advantages for the local community (Figure 5-6).

With regard to the same issue, Abdulla Bokhari (1978), the renowned environmental planner and designer, mentioned a negative opinion about the Project of Developing the Corniche Area. He has believed that huge amounts of money have been wasted every year on the projects aimed at beautifying and developing the image of the city. Recently, he has mentioned, in a newspaper article published in December 2009, that the Corniche Area Development Project involved the creation of a terrible road made of asphalt. In addition, the project plans have allowed the use of rubble of low quality in the establishment process. Accordingly, this negligence has resulted in the establishment of high-rise buildings without taking into account the vulnerability of the land. Further, the project plans and their implementation have not been based on scientific studies which should have been performed for identifying the expected effect of the development processes on the crust of the earth and the surface infrastructure. Moreover, the project plans have been carried out without examining and understanding the sewage issues. That is why the activities related to the project have distorted the beauty and glamour of Jeddah's shores and damaged the marine life.

Figure 5-6: The picture reflecting the promotion of the public realm in the Corniche Area in Jeddah City.



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

From a design and landscape architectural perspective, Al-Shahrani (1992), Hammadi (1993), and Sobahi (1995) have believed that the Project of Corniche Development represents a useless form of urban development and beautification, and it could not help to develop a lively recreational area where city residents can escape to for avoiding the pressures of their daily life. Moreover, they have mentioned that the Corniche Road, which was primarily developed for fun driving, is disadvantageous. The deficiencies in the road have been attributed to the inappropriateness of its size and the inadequacy of traffic safety. Also, the pavement of the road was equipped with benches, which have been distributed carelessly. Although these benches have been installed for providing a safe space where residents can sit, there have been noticeable deficiencies in the pavement and the distribution of the benches. In addition, the width of the pavement is not sufficient for allowing the presence of lampposts and seating areas. That is why the seating areas and walking trails were accompanied by inadequate planting. Also, it has been believed that the use of evergreen plants and trees in developing the Corniche Area has been a serious mistake as the chosen plants and trees need to be watered with huge amounts of water. This adversely distorts the quality and effectiveness of the project.

From an institutional perspective, Bokhari commented on this issue in 1978 mentioning that the results of the urban development process and action plans are negative and are not appropriate for the conditions of Jeddah's climate and the common features of Jeddah's society and culture. In 1981, Jamel Akbar commented on this issue clarifying that the execution of the Corniche Development Project and the establishment of the Sculpture Open Museum⁴⁴ should not be carried out as they have led to the waste of several public resources. He has added that the resources of the society are unwisely allocated for the development of areas where no residents exist while there are several

⁴⁴ The Jeddah Sculpture Museum an open-air museum, housing Jeddah's world famous sculptures in a seven square kilometer park along the Jeddah Corniche, known locally as 'Al Hamraa'. In September 2013, the project was completed to community acclaim.

densely-populated areas which do not have any well-maintained infrastructure and which really need much more attention.

From a positive perspective, in light of the fast-paced economic changes and developments occurring in Saudi Arabia, the Corniche Development Project has been successfully transformed into a prominent recreational area which can dazzle city residents and appeal to visitors from all the countries of the Gulf Region. The project has attracted visitors to the city with its sea frontage and its new urban improvements. Furthermore, it has been transformed into an excellent real estate destination including several high-rise buildings and tourist luxury buildings such as hotels. Therefore, the development project has not only promoted the Corniche outline, but it has also become a destination attracting a big number of real estate projects such as the establishment of fancy hotels and resorts. This reflects that the outcomes of the Corniche Development Project are likely to transform Jeddah in a top tourist and recreational destination in Saudi Arabia, the Gulf Region, and the Arab World. Despite the advantages of the development project, the activities of establishing new buildings in the Corniche Area distort the environment surrounding the seafront. Moreover, there have been obvious deficiencies in the drainage system in the area. Thus, the municipality needs to deal with the negative consequences arising from the non-existence of an effective drainage system. From a macro-spatial planning perspective, the execution of the Corniche Development Project was appropriate for the conditions prevailing over the 1970s and the beginning of the 1980s. At that time, there was a serious need for the development of a high-level recreational area. Generally speaking, this project beautified the image of the city and transformed the city into a suitable economic environment for private investments. Furthermore, the implementation of this project played a role in preserving the accessible waterfront located on the shoreline of the north.

5.2.4 Public Spaces Established Based on a Partnership between the Private Sector/Developers and the Public Sector

The accomplishment of the urban development actions in Jeddah was carried out in light of the efforts of the central and local authorities as well as the private sector. Wide-scale urban developments, which were carried out in Jeddah city, were launched from the 1960s until 1970s. With the course of time, the private sector became responsible for the provision of several public luxury places and the development of many recreational areas and public places. Thus, the role of the private sector in the creation of public space is obviously apparent in several projects.

As a result of the introduction of the master plan in 1973, a group of highly qualified private consultants and planners were commissioned to make action area plans for the development of the central area and the Corniche Area with the help and support of the municipality. According to what has been mentioned in the earlier sections, one of the major objectives of these development plans was the encouragement of the private sector bodies to take part in the development process. The

outline of these plans was determined according to the outcome of negotiations carried out between the municipality as a first party and the finance, construction, real estate, and design sectors as a second party. In this regard, the guidance and instructions associated with the implementation processes of development and designs are determined and specified based on the nature of each project. These instructions and guidance should be easily understandable and could be easily applied for the purpose of eliminating any obstacles or constraints on the project plans developed by the private sector.

The public spaces, which are owned by the private sector, can be defined as the spaces that have been created into private-sector shopping centers, recreational places, and areas embracing the accommodation of several residents. The majority of private-sector projects have been set up in the Corniche Area, the City Center, crucial intersections in outskirts, and main traffic roads including Prince Mohammed Bin Abdul-Aziz Street⁴⁵ and Al- Medina Road⁴⁶. The establishment of these developmental projects was mainly complicated due to the complexity of negotiations with builders regarding permitted heights and allowances, and the awarded spaces. One of the main priorities included in the developmental project is the establishment of recreational parks and plazas. The majority of the developers and builders literally declared their displeasure with the excessive control practiced by the officials of the municipality. In fact, those officials were interested in the creation of public spaces within the locations of private developers' projects for the purpose of increasing the number of businesses and areas embracing commerce and trade rather than providing public recreational places. Those officials intended to develop an impressive commercial environment where investors can make huge profits and where shoppers could have an interesting shopping experience. Al-Mahmal Shopping Center is one of the most prominent models of successful private projects, which has created public space downtown (Figure 5-7).

⁴⁵ Prince Mohammed bin Abdul-Aziz Street also called Tahlia Street is an important fashion and shopping street in the mid-town of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia. It also contains many upscale department shops.

⁴⁶ Al Madinah "Medina" Road is the artery vibrant of the city of Jeddah where the movement does not stop day and night, and connects the city of Jeddah from the north to the south.

Figure 5-7: The picture displaying the outcome of improving open areas in Jeddah City which are near Al-Mahmal Shopping Centre and the Queen Building downtown.



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

The discussed project was put into action based on an agreement and negotiations carried out between private-sector developers and the municipality. It was particularly established as an indispensable element of an office and shopping complex owned by the private sector. The complex encompassed spaces subdivided with steel and glass, along with an external space linking the major buildings. The complex as a whole is a perfect model of a huge structure established based on a current urban shape. The design features and size of the complex have made this new structure isolated and totally different from the nearby market and living areas which are characterized by traditional features. According to what was mentioned by Clammer (1997) in his evaluation of projects having similar features and carried out in advanced countries, these projects are safer as the public are allowed to enter through a specific number of *checkpoints*. Moreover, shoppers are able to have better, more secure, more enjoyable shopping experiences. In general, the structure and architectural features of the above-mentioned project in addition to the majority of the huge structures developed by the private sector include free-standing structures which are totally disconnected from the nearby urban structure. The plan and design of these projects indicate a great deal of concern with ensuring security by watching people entering and leaving buildings and existing on the adjacent open areas. Interestingly, the management of these projects depends on private security personnel for patrolling the indoor and open areas. Within these projects, effective surveillance cameras (CCTV) are installed for watching the movement of the public and detecting any crime as soon as possible. Further, these private projects include electric walkways and escalators.

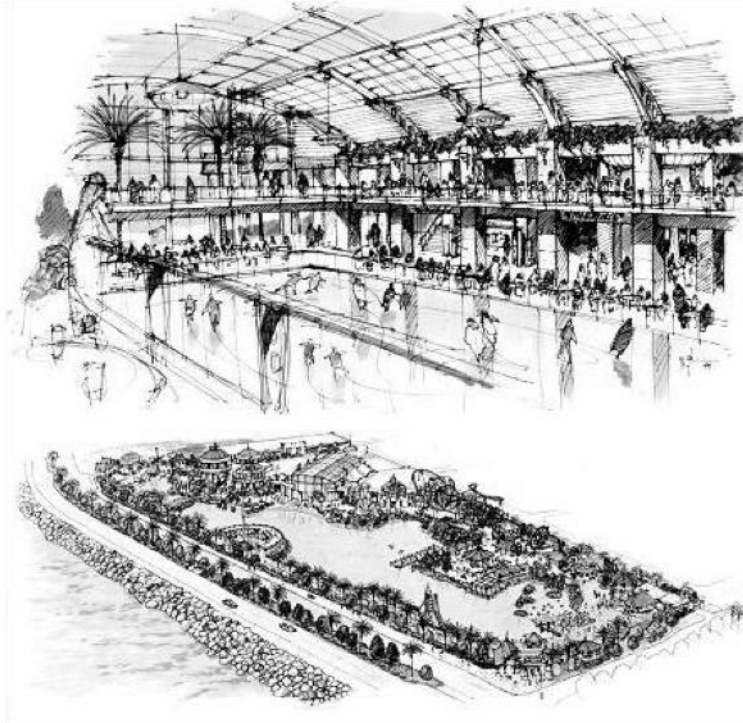
Due to the increase in the accountabilities and tasks of the municipality and the decrease in its financial resources over the last twenty years, the municipality officials have become no longer able to provide sufficient official resources for the development of recreational areas and public spaces

(Sobahi, 1995). No doubt urban development plans have helped to build an adequate number of new housing units in Jeddah. However, the implementation of these plans has become challenging, especially as there are increasingly huge rates of population expansion in addition to decreased financial resources. These dangerous challenges have led to the mismanagement of urban development plans. The poorly planned distribution of modern residential areas across Jeddah has resulted in a cutthroat increase in the costs needed for the development and preservation of public utilities and services. Thus, the municipality has decided to rely on a privatization policy which means that the investment projects of the municipality can be transferred to private control, such as recreational facilities.

One of the successful developmental partnerships between the public sector and the private sector is evident in the north of the Corniche Area, which constitutes a recreational area. Moreover, the private sector has collaborated with the public sector for establishing Al-Shallal Theme Park. This park was successfully constructed on a government-owned land by a private-sector corporation called *the Abdurrahman Faqih Group*⁴⁷. Obviously, this project is regarded as a prominent amusement park in Jeddah City where various entertainment amenities are efficiently provided for local residents and visitors coming from other Saudi cities. With regard to the design of the park, it is unique, especially as the park embraces the biggest roller coaster in Saudi Arabia. In addition, the park embraces a recreational building consisting of two floors. This building encompasses a massive rink for practicing ice skating and tremendous areas for playing fun games which are suitable for children. Besides, the park contains an enormous open area and a lagoon where a group of sales stores and many prestigious restaurants exist. It seems that the public open spaces are managed in the same way of managing private open spaces, especially when it comes to security tools and the number of working hours. It is assumed that private planners and owners of public spaces do not take public expectations into account while developing investment agreements. Thus, it is expected that private developers regard any of their developed public spaces as private property or possession rather than spaces aimed at serving different purposes of the public (Figures 5-8).

⁴⁷ Abdurrahman Faqih Group a group of companies interested in the food and entertainment sector

Figure 5-8: A photo displaying Al-Shallal Theme Park in Jeddah City.



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

Significantly, the huge structures, which are established by the Private Sector or implemented through partnerships between the public sector and private sector, have led to the development of a group of touristic destinations as well as a broad group of areas for recreation, commerce, and residence. However, a number of analysts and experts describe this case as a distortion of the traditional architectural features of urban spaces. These analysts see that these urban development projects destroy the beauty of civil life. Kirby (2008) commented on this subject in his evaluation of projects having similar features and carried out in America. In his opinion, the increase in the number of huge structures and urban development projects has been perceived as evidence of capitalism and polarization which deteriorated the issues of social discrimination. Regarding the same subject, Davis (1992) mentioned an important opinion, From Davis' point of view, the huge structures, spaces, and amenities, which are established and owned by the private sector, are perceived as a tool for protecting extravagant lifestyles. In general, private developers are concerned with the application of surveillance procedures and safety precautions. There is a controversy over the role of private developers and investors in the deformity in urban life. Some people believe that private urban developers have aggravated several urban social problems and distorted the nature of urban life while there are others believing that private investors have played an important role in beautifying the appearance of the city and establishing impressive public spaces such as entertainment parks in the Corniche Area.

5.2.5 The Main Public Park in the City

According to specific criteria and recommendations incorporated into the master plan, the establishment of a group of centers was suggested to meet various social demands. These centers encompass Islamic houses of worship, retail stores, open areas, educational institutions, and fun amenities such as parks. It is recommended to establish a public park every one hectare in order to serve a group of minimum 1000 residents. This indicates that the establishment of public parks should be based on rational planning or arithmetic computations. One of the main objectives of the master plan is the establishment of as many public parks as possible for ensuring that all residents can have fun open spaces. Moreover, the master plan has recommended that Khuzam Palace Garden should be broadened, and its facilities should be improved so that it could act as a prominent public garden for serving as many residents as possible and additionally act as a special vast area for Eid prayer⁴⁸. In fact, Khuzam Palace Garden occupies an area of 5 hectares across the Mecca Road and encompasses 3 other massive open spaces. According to the suggestions of the master plan, broad comprehensive systems developed for remodeling the city have been executed by the municipality. One of the major recommendations of the master plan is the transformation of the majority of the open areas into public parks. The Development of Public Parks has acted as a segment of the urban adornment scheme which has been aimed at transforming Jeddah into a 'town with a tremendous green area' (Sobahi, 1995).

Obviously, the municipality has exerted a lot of effort to promote the role of local authorities in the creation of public spaces. Also, schoolchildren have been motivated to develop the public areas of their hometown by 'gardening' their own residential areas. Moreover, urban developers, who were given the mission of executing great public projects, were asked by the municipality officials to establish a huge number of recreational communal facilities including parks as well as other fun places (Daghistani, 1993). In this respect, Bokhari (1978) has mentioned that the mayor of the municipality has relied on a new team embracing foreign skillful experts specializing in landscape architecture as well as a number of Saudi urban specialists for the purpose of becoming in charge of the mission of producing public space. The responsibilities of the team included the development of schemes for efficiently establishing the main parks in Jeddah and for supervising the establishment processes of these parks. In spite of the huge money allocated for the establishment of massive urban parks and their pathways, many parks and other public places have declined due to the inadequacy of maintenance provided for these places. Also, Jeddah is located in an area where there are inadequate amounts of water due to the dry climate (Figure 5-9).

⁴⁸ Eid prayers are the special prayers offered to commemorate two Islamic festivals traditionally in an open space or field available for prayer.

Figure 5-9: The photo above displaying Khuzam Palace Park in Jeddah City.



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

Regionally speaking, the main standard for providing public space is that the designation of these public spaces should meet the local demands existing over each 1 hectare (2.47 acres) involving 1000 residents. Also, the standards for designing these public spaces have involved the importance of the features of the targeted public space including the appropriate size and place. These features have been determined from a perspective of physical planning. In spite of the fact that the international standards of establishing public parks involve the significance of meeting the safety and convenience requirements, the majority of the public parks in the city do not meet these standards (Hammadi, 1993). Unfortunately, the attempts to develop an effective spatial planning policy for providing public space have failed, and dreadful sums of money have been allocated for the creation and establishment of disorganized or poorly planned urban gardens. The ineffectiveness of these gardens can be attributed to their poor design and their negative effect on the appearance of the environment of the city. Many of the strongly recommended international standards of urban development are not efficiently fulfilled in the current parks or gardens such as environmental preservation, reachability, privacy, sociability, convenience, and safety. Although these standards have been neglected to a great extent, the financial and technical matters in connection with the establishment of these parks have been greatly taken into consideration. In short, the failure of current public parks is because of the inadequate awareness of urban needs and urban development standards along with the presence of ineffective systems for managing urban development projects. Thus, it is impossible to meet the objectives mentioned in urban development plans and schemes and to establish beauty in public spaces (Bokhari, 1978).

Sadly, a small number of the recreational areas were planned and developed in a manner ensuring the privacy of visitors, their safety, and entertainment. Moreover, there are a few convenient open areas which enable residents to take part in enjoyable fun games. Actually, the majority of the current parks allow visitors to spend passive recreation without involving them in interesting activities. The

small number of convenient public parks existing in the city has made it difficult for family members to gather open spaces, and thus, family separation or disintegration has been aggravated. Moreover, the observations of Bokhari (1978) and Sobahi (1995) along with the results of our survey have revealed that the plans in connection with utilizing lands have not shed light on the significance of the presence of kids areas and playgrounds for different age groups. According to the poor quality of these plans, the majority of the current public parks have not attracted many residents.

5.3 The Creation of Public space within Residential Areas Located in Modern Neighborhoods

5.3.1 Regulations Related to Subdividing Lands and Constructing Buildings

Old regulations related to subdividing lands of residential areas located in modern neighborhoods already existed and applied prior to the development of the master plans up in the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia. At the beginning of the twentieth century, ARAMCO⁴⁹ set up an oil-camp located in Dhahran, that is embraced by the Sharqiyya Province “Eastern Province” next to the oil fields (Al-Hathloul, 1981). This camp was set up near an external road. A subdivision was applied to this camp in order to divide it into minor neighborhoods using main roads which cut across at the center, developing a block embracing all essential facilities such as shopping centers, educational institutions, and police stations. Later on, the grid model involving iron became well-known, attractive, and trendy not only within the oil-based regions located in al-Sharqiyya but also in several suburbs in several other areas of the province. The American planning pattern involving grid and iron was additionally applied in other large cities of the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, particularly in the 5 main cities: Dammam, Mecca, Riyadh, Jeddah, and Medina. Under the auspices of King Saud⁵⁰, the Saudi Government intended to set up many accommodation projects, especially for employees occupying high ranks in governmental institutions. These projects were planned to be built in Jeddah in the year 1945. A great example of these housing projects was the Prince Faisal Residential Compound located in Al-Sharafeyah (Bokhari, 1978). The process of subdividing Al-Sharafeyah was based on a grid-iron model with a series of streets whose widths range from ten meters (for access roads) to thirty meters for (major roads). The shape of the majority of blocks was rectangular, whose size was 25 m x 25 m and whose dimensions were 100 m x 50 m.

In general, these developmental construction projects involved the construction of the massive lot and the villa. They added a special touch and features to the concept of modern neighborhoods. The

⁴⁹ Saudi Aramco is a Saudi Arabian national petroleum and natural gas company based in Dhahran, Saudi Arabia. According to accounts seen by Bloomberg News, the most profitable company in the world.

⁵⁰ Saud bin Abdul-Aziz Al Saud was King of Saudi Arabia from 1953 to 1964. After a period of internal tension in Saudi Arabia, he was forced from the throne and replaced by his brother Faisal.

most important aspect is that, in the place of the lot size which could not be less than 100 square meters as specified in the traditional communities, these subdivisions were planned to cover a proportion of 400 square meters. Moreover, based on the related planning rules, seats must be set up around each house in all neighborhoods. After the middle of the twentieth century, these standards started to be used casually in all the cities of the Kingdom. Upon the official consent to Riyadh Master Plans in the year 1973, the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs planned to enforce these regulations and develop directions for subdividing lands located in modern neighborhoods in all the cities of Saudi Arabia. These directions became later on governing laws (Al-khedheiri, 1998; Al-Otaibi, 2006).

5.3.2 Subdividing Lands Based on the Grid Street Layout

According to what has been mentioned earlier, the Master Plan embraced the grid model which is applied globally as the major planning principle for utilizing and subdividing lands of modern residential regions or neighborhoods. The major principle was that the system of developing grid streets is the most appropriate of all systems to regulate and control traffic because it helps to achieve optimum access to neighborhoods relying on automobiles. The new plans in connection with the development of residential areas based on grid-iron models started to be applied to the development of suburbs. Arterial or main roads have been planned to ease through-movement. Furthermore, local roads and collectors have been set up to link various communities. Concerning grid street designs, they are not essentially applied to the development processes of suburbs. The grid system is aimed at reducing traffic congestion occurring on highways in Jeddah. In spite of this, new residential areas including several grid crossroads frequently witness car accidents and air pollution. Besides, the establishment of new roads in various parts of residential areas has resulted in the distortion of vehicles and pedestrian systems. Further, parking lots, as well as buffer zones, have been developed on under-developed spaces. In neighborhoods in which cars are mainly used as transportation, pavements are few and are recurrently trespassed by drive-way space (Ford 1999).

The socio-cultural research reveals that distributing residents geographically to various categories of residential areas has aggravated discrimination among the city residents by class. Also, the fracture of residential blocks near isolated buildings resulted in the destruction of the urban and social structure and the production of repetitive and patterned forms of physical structures. As a result, the significance of the streets as a medium of social interaction in the old urban structure has gradually faded away. Further, in light of the present expensive and uniform walls built around buildings, streets have no longer acted as extensions of the frontal part of residential buildings. Based on this, maintaining and cleaning the street area existing in front of residential areas have become the absolute task of the municipality. Contrarily, this task was the responsibility of residents in old communities (Akbar, 1982; Eben Saleh, 2004; Hakim, 2007; Ben-Hamouche, 2009). In this regard, Bokhari (1978) has mentioned that 'the absence of interest in the importance of streets in easing

social interaction has resulted in apparent isolation of residents behind the huge walls of their houses and consequently creeping dissolution of public social life. According to what will be discussed more thoroughly in the following chapter, the disintegration of the urban life structure arising from the establishment of grid layouts resulted in the production of vague areas and unutilized spaces which have resulted in the destruction of the original features of city areas. This consequently led to the gradual absence of social integration (Carruthers 2002; Madanipour 2007).

5.3.3 The Coverage of the Plot

The authorized regulations in connection with subdividing lands in neighborhoods located in Jeddah City, as well as other cities, determine 60 percent of the lot spaces as building coverage so that a remaining area could constitute 1\5 of the street width to be utilized for parking cars and develop a drive-way in front of each house, and 2 meters from the sides and front of the plot could be set back. Regulations in connection with building including those regulating mandatory setbacks and building coverage restrictions promoted the establishment of freestanding skyscrapers in new neighborhoods. In fact, apartment buildings have acted as a major type of building in highly-populated neighborhoods, while villas have acted as a major type of building in low-populated areas. While we were examining the features of the new neighborhoods, it was discovered that the regulations in connection with utilizing lands and building were not only aimed at developing separate zones for different purposes which hindered the integration of a set of various activities within one residential area, but these regulations also led to the distortion of social structure and the emergence of dull residential areas which diminish social integration and interaction. In the opinion of Barnett (2003), the enforcement of new regulations in connection with building and urban development resulted in the emergence of a group of separate isolated buildings located in public spaces. From a functional perspective, the setback plans and regulations which resulted in the development of disconnected buildings additionally made these new buildings vulnerable to direct sunlight and heat. Consequently, these buildings must embrace perfect air-conditioning systems which have resulted in incurring huge costs for operation and repair.

With regard to the aspect of space, the independent or free-standing buildings that took the place of old connected residential houses have resulted in the aggravation of visual intrusion and damaged the open spaces existing among houses. Besides, the newly developed residential areas witness an impairment of the privacy of residents in light of the ineffective organization of buildings located in each subdivision. Due to the height of newly developed buildings along with their windows, residents have become able to look across near houses, and open yards allow the invasion of residents' privacy. The non-existence of visual protection leads to the aggravation of extreme dislike and hatred among the residents dwelling in the same residential area. This issue is additionally aggravated by the method of orienting buildings and distributing windows. Because new houses do not sufficiently meet the increasing demand for privacy, the owners of houses themselves currently take and apply

their preventive measures. For instance, some residents have decided to scale up their houses' fence heights and strength for the purpose of ensuring the required privacy. Other residents have installed surveillance cameras around their houses (Figure 5-10).

Figure 5-10: The photo displaying the screening of the open area located around the free-standing buildings in Jeddah City. Utilizing these bars to provide privacy.



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

Some scholars such as Bokhari (1978) and Akbar (1988) who analyzed this subject from a socio-cultural point of view mentioned that the application of the newly developed planning standards to Jeddah City distorted the traditional structure of the city and resulted in a decline in the true meaning of community and social life. In the opinion of Melvin Webber that was mentioned in Newman 1975, residents could achieve social integration by having common values, activities, and physical closeness.

The principles of physical closeness and the likeness of values within traditional residential areas influenced old residents to have alike demands and mutual understanding. Contrarily, in the newly developed neighborhoods, these advantages have faded away to a large extent. Unfortunately, Jeddah's urban landscape features have been disfigured. The city has witnessed a fast-paced increase in the establishment of free-standing buildings with an unharmonious varied collection of structures and shapes which have replaced the traditional urban structure with its close physical features. No doubt the flourishing economic conditions of the kingdom have motivated global architects from countries in the West in addition to architectural consulting companies from all various countries. In light of the role of these architects and companies in the kingdom, new styles in connection with organizing the city structure and designing buildings have emerged. As a result, there has been gradually an application of a collection of various architectural styles and an excessive emergence of advanced fascinating architectural structures, such as the glass external parts of buildings. As a result, the landscape of the city has gradually lacked the beauty of its original

identity reflected by the features of the traditional buildings. Within the modern urban structure, several beautiful villas and parks which should promote the beauty of the urban fabric are still totally invisible due to the presence of the ugly walls established around modern houses.

5.3.4 The Development of Public Space in Residential Areas Based on Modern Architectural Principles

According to what has been mentioned earlier, applying the modern regulations in connection with utilizing lands and constructing buildings led to the establishment of specific standards for the design, arrangement, and types of building and led to the emergence of various architectural models, designs and materials. The reliance of city developers on technical preoccupations and the grid system while subdividing lands has additionally led to the production of patterned public spaces in modern neighborhoods. As a result, the networks of public space are based on the conventional rectangular modern for the purpose of subdividing lands. This signifies that the block has become an integral element to characterize the space network embracing mainly streets, sometimes public parks, or uninhabited lots (Carmona, (Heath et al.) 2003).

Based on the regulations in connection with subdividing lands, the *street* has become the major public space form in the public space network. Various streets having various widths were developed for the purpose of regulating traffic, eliminating traffic congestion, and facilitating access to private lots. The majority of streets are sufficiently broad to ease the movement of cars and allow adequate margins for pedestrians. Further, the borders of streets are specified according to the private utilization of the spaces designated for setbacks. Unfortunately, the public space and landscape are full of materials which hinder the movement of pedestrians and adversely impact streets, landscapes, pedestrian paths, and pavements.

In accordance with the regulations in connection with subdividing lands, the professional officials of the municipality have decided that 33 percent of the subdivided lands should be designated for areas with small to medium population sizes for the purpose of developing streets and public recreational areas such as gardens, play areas, and educational institutions. The instructions in connection with subdividing lands additionally stipulate that apartment buildings and villas should be the major type of buildings in neighborhoods, while apartment buildings including commercial buildings on their ground floors should be exclusively allowed along the main traffic roads having widths, which are above thirty meters. One of the disadvantages of these directions or guidelines is that they have been developed in a chaotic and haphazard manner. According to what has been clarified by Punter (1998: 135) in his evaluation of the directions in connection with designing residential areas in San Francisco, the main disadvantage of these directions is rigidity. In this regard, it is obvious that the designation and subdivision of public space are executed according to the outcome of the plans outlined by the municipality officials, who have been in charge of approving land subdivisions before being implemented.

The municipality officials approve the subdivision of lands when urban designers and developers must ensure that the measures specified by the Municipality Planning Review Board are adhered to. It is necessary to highlight that even though the scale of areas needed for public spaces is obviously mentioned in the regulations in connection with subdividing lands, this scale or percentage is rarely taken into consideration. Thus, this decreases the scale of public spaces needed for the development of recreational areas. No doubt Jeddah municipality has exerted much effort to promote the physical features of residential areas; however, the majority of these areas do not have adequately beautiful spatial features. Also, the majority of the public spaces located in modern residential areas have not been efficiently arranged, so they do not satisfy residents or beautify the local environment. According to the examination of the officially implemented subdivisions of modern neighborhoods in Jeddah, it is obvious that most of the public spaces have the same geometrical shape (Figure 5-11).

These public spaces are separated from their nearby areas with streets made of asphalt and including small paths of pedestrians. However, they are rarely utilized as they are placed in neighborhoods in which the residents are seldom in need of them. Shortly, the development of the regulations in connection with utilizing lands and constructing buildings resulted in the development of modern neighborhoods in the cities of the kingdom, which do not follow local context. The division of the city into minor elements including the categories of land utilization, the square footage related to the development of recreational areas, and public space lands per person are all factors which have led to the occurrence of social segregation and which have not helped to develop a healthy residential area in which social integration is promoted. Due to promoting a car-dependent urban structure, the regulations in connection with designing new neighborhoods have diminished the major features of the pedestrian-based city and its social diversification (Talen, 2008). Accordingly, these spaces and areas contained in the social structure of the city have turned into elements of urban environments which are socially detached and disconnected (Madanipour, 2010).

Figure 5-11: A photo displaying a typical public space in Jeddah's newly developed neighborhoods.



Source: Jeddah Municipality.

5.4 The Latest Initiatives Taken for Boosting the Quality of Public Space

5.4.1 Planning Standard In Connection with Subdividing Lands

For the purpose of establishing spatial consistency and social balance in order to fight against the barbaric abstraction of modernism caused by the regulations in connection with subdividing lands and constructing buildings, a group of urban designers established comprehensive communities at the end of the twentieth century for the purpose of introducing both conventional principles of urban design and modern principles. A group of urban designers was assigned the task of developing projects which met requirements in connection with beauty and usefulness and which were executed in accordance with the socio-cultural standards and aims of two public organizations (Abu-Ghazze, 1997). The Riyadh Development Authority outlined schemes for the staff of the Foreign Affairs Ministry and the Diplomatic⁵¹ Quarter. Also, the Royal Commission for Jubail and Yanbu⁵² outlined developmental schemes for two major industrial cities. The development of these schemes was aimed at the development of an appropriate residential atmosphere where the privacy of residents is ensured and social closeness is developed among residents, while at the same time different features of the conventional Islamic community are reflected (Eben-Saleh, 2001).

The development of these schemes is interpreted as an effective decision, and it indicates that there are alternative options for the regulations in connection with subdividing lands that are currently applied in Saudi Arabia. These schemes have been expected to enable Saudi urban developers to

⁵¹ The Diplomatic Quarter is home to foreign embassies in Riyadh, international organizations as well as residences and malls. It is especially known for its fine architecture, and is considered a model for other Islamic cities around the world.

⁵² The Royal Commission was established in 1975. The mission of the RCJY is to: "Plan, promote, develop and manage Petrochemicals and Energy intensive industrial cities in Jubail and Yanbu.

come up with much better plans for future neighborhoods and to improve the current building regulations. These schemes along with other schemes having similar urban features can be associated with some questions such as “How is it possible to revolutionize current views of urban design practice and to promote the execution of other projects meeting the recommended local spatial and socio-cultural standards?”

For the purpose of discussing the problems in connection with modern neighborhoods, the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs recruited Two experienced consultants for developing schemes of new residential areas in 1992. Later on, the urban designers and developers recruited by the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs started to examine the features of both old and modern architectural designs for numerous current housing plans prior to submitting a sample design with regard to the targeted modern structure of residential areas. It was necessary to examine and analyze current conditions so as to identify the planning issues caused by developed zoning. The hired urban planners, designers, developers, and architects have been provided with architectural and urban directions which could help the development staff to prepare a scheme in which privacy norms are taken into consideration. It has been very challenging to hold onto the directions developed by the planners in connection with the issue of privacy. One of the planning team members who belonged to the General Directory of Urban Planning in Jeddah mentioned his opinion on the development proposals and suggested schemes to be applied to various cities of the Kingdom.

He particularly mentioned that:

It is not rational to make an assumption and to propose that these plans are recommended to be applied by all the cities of Saudi Arabia. The differences in the aspects of geography and culture should be thoroughly examined. Switching from the conventional structure of residential areas to the modern structure occurred over a few years due to the fast-paced increase in the population size which was obvious in the main cities of Saudi Arabia. Actually, the process of urbanization occurred at a faster pace. The inadequacy of the present local professionals drove the officials of the municipality to adopt standards for planning and designing urban structures adopted in the West, and this resulted in the appearance of new residential areas based on modern architectural principles. Consequently, this has brought about several problems for the municipalities, particularly in connection with residential privacy, safety, or public security. Hence, it is necessary to assess thoroughly the suitability and the results of implementing any new design directions for the development of new residential areas in the future prior to accepting them as urban building regulations. Besides, so as to prevent probable and improbable negative responses to a group of specialists who have urged the government and the public to restore the traditional structure of cities for overcoming the problems in connection with current modern residential areas, urban planners and designers should carry out several empirical studies within a short period of time for the purpose of evaluating and understanding the current situation and conditions through an identification of people's points of view about the proposals of planning and design. The recruited urban development

professionals should deal with the negative aspects of the current grid system applied to the process of subdividing residential lands. Moreover, they should be fully aware of the advantages of the standards for traditional urban design and also take into consideration the desires of residents, changing with the course of time (Interview 20017, translated from the Arabic language).

There has been an increasing interest in boosting the level of public life in new neighborhoods developed in accordance with modern architectural areas. This interest has been evident in the continuous development of new design plans and regulations. However, this interest has not adequately improved the existing status of public spaces associated with this context. This ineffectiveness could be traced to numerous reasons. One of the major reasons is that a group of decision-makers belonging to other ministries were not sure that the plans of the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs would help to develop environments with a stronger degree of safety and security. Additionally, there were legal obstacles, and a debate was launched by some municipality officials who criticize these schemes or plans and highlighted that imposing this form of residential areas would produce public spaces which were unattractive. Based on the argument of these officials, local authorities would not be easily capable of establishing safety and applying maintenance in these areas because they cannot be easily accessed by trucks and other motor vehicles. Further, these schemes were criticized by land explorers and planners who emphasized that the implementation of urban subdivisions is not appropriate at the economic level and that the design and arrangement would not meet the demands of the public with regard to having houses along broad, straight streets.

Lately, the Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs has supported the conventional structure of the gates of residential areas to be used in the current residential areas and promoted the application of traffic calming precautions including speed roundabouts and bumps. This consequently slows traffic down on local streets. Moreover, this turns grids into virtual cul-de-sacs in which traffic blockades negatively affect travel along any local street which eventually becomes hopeless for more than 1 or 2 blocks. According to what was mentioned by Wendell Cox (2005), a major characteristic of cul-de-sacs is that they produce an environment with a higher degree of safety, especially for pedestrians and kids. The integration of this idea into the modern social urban structure indicates that these ideas will be taken into consideration on a wider scale and play a greater role in the current neighborhoods of the city if the municipality decides to impose them.

5.4.2 Creation of Public Space Based on Design Guidelines

Recently, the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia has witnessed a growing public understanding and awareness of the importance of boosting the living circumstances prevailing in residential areas in which the level and features of public space constitute an indispensable element. Moreover, there has been an interest in the quality of public spaces created and its different dimensions. For the purpose of discussing and analyzing the problems in connection with the management of urban

development and public space in 2006, MOMRA⁵³ published 2 guidebooks about recommended criteria for urban planning and designs which should be adopted in all recreational areas and public space created by the AFM Consultants Office⁵⁴. The major objective of these guidebooks is providing solutions to any problems related to public space and promoting the awareness and abilities of local authorities so that the quality of public spaces could be upgraded. The guidebooks categorized public space into 5 classes according to the elements of population size and catchment areas where public spaces could be successfully established and meet public needs. The 5 types of public space are districts, residential areas, city-level public spaces, building clusters, and boundaries of local branches of the municipality. The new developed governing planning system, which has been mentioned in the guidebook for designing public space, has majorly revolved around the methods of developing principles of place-responsive designs. However, several guidelines included in the guidebook seem to be prescriptive, which indicates that only the goals, hopes, and vision of professionals are taken into account regardless of the different residents' needs and opinions.

In the opinion of Punter (2007), this guidebook might lead to the development of more procedural regulations to attain '*substantive deregulation*'. Moreover, the success of this system necessitates the application of effective methods of reorganizing public spaces and managing them with more attention in accordance with a 'cross-sectoral approach' which is less authoritarian (De-Magalhaes and Carmona, 2006). Further, there should be a wider-scale awareness of the best standards for developing public space.

Within a discussion with the manager of the Design Open Space Areas Directorate in Jeddah regarding future initiatives, the manager mentioned that it has become necessary to create an effective plan for developing public spaces and accomplishing cooperative and partnership deals with other partners belonging to the public and private sectors in addition to local community associations. Until now, they have been interested in fifty primitive plots of land surrounding Jeddah for the purpose of transforming them into gardens or public parks. Currently, they are asking for the help of local donors to financially promote the creation of well-planned public spaces. In this regard, the municipality had accomplished fourteen designs for establishing public parks whose area ranges from five thousand to seven thousand square meters, along with the probability of setting up wider spaces based on the location and residents' needs. Besides, he revealed that his Department would show the designs openly in the following months so as to allow private investors and donors to select the places and designs to financially promote.

In short, the creation of urban spaces has been broadly recognized as a major feature of modern urban plans and designs. Currently, there is an increasing interest in public spaces and their dimensions. This interest has been displayed by the municipality authorities and private institutions.

⁵³ Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs in Saudi Arabia

⁵⁴ A.F.M. Consultants is a multi-discipline organization. Registered in 1994. The office senior staff are well versed with International standards & codes as well as local regulations.

Creating and keeping these spaces in good condition has become a crucial matter in the Kingdom, especially in areas where the sizes of the population have fiercely grown. Some of the ideas related to the development and preservation of public spaces have been proposed by the officials of the Ministry of Social Affairs and Mecca Province, the experts of the Jeddah Municipality, and a number of professors working at King Abdul-Aziz University, who all have supported the upgrading of community centers and proposed that the creation of urban spaces in modern neighborhoods must be optimum, comprehensive, and compliant with socio-cultural standards.

5.5 The Implementation of Public Space In Modern Neighborhoods In Jeddah City

The disconnected and detached implementation of the modern neighborhoods or residential areas has aggravated emotions of isolation and disintegration within the local community. The modern structure of these residential areas is comfortable and fancy at the physical level; however, residents feel abandoned in their residential areas. In neighborhoods where there are big sizes of the population, the inhabitants believe that they are disconnected from the public spaces next to their houses and thus, they feel isolated from other neighbors and accordingly feel that their social life has been dramatically deteriorated. Consequently, this miserable life within their residential areas has driven them to detach from their surrounding community. In residential areas where there are small sizes of population, due to the inadequacy of semi-private open space and the inefficient distribution and arrangement of buildings, inhabitants do not have a sense of sociability. The inhabitants of these areas are incapable of mingling with their neighbors. Obviously, the residents are incapable of enjoying the true meaning of community in modern neighborhoods. The residents of these areas do not have gatherings with their neighbors or take part in-group activities with their neighbors. In the next sections, these matters will be thoroughly explained by providing various examples of the creation of public spaces based on specific study cases.

By following the principles of the modern neighborhoods, the houses included in these areas encompasses detached villas made up of 2 floors in addition to apartment buildings embracing from 2 to 5 floors. The size of the majority of the blocks is 60x 180m, and the lot size is 20x30m. The modern neighborhoods have been based on a grid system having the shape of a rectangular, along with rectangular and square lots. The district embraces side-by-side alignments in addition to simple designs of streets which have been aimed at the achievement of flexible vehicle movement. The widths of these streets range from (10 -20m). The architectural style is originally American, and it was implemented based on zoning regulations which mandate the presence of distances from the street and the establishment of detached buildings. In 1985, the regulations were altered for permitting mixed-use buildings along the major roads whose width become beyond 30m. These altered regulations interested private investors who were encouraged to launch retail activities along the main roads and in all the broad local roads existing in these areas. In the opinion of Daghistani (1993), these new regulations brought about more severe traffic jams and chaotic distribution of retail

services. This indicates that the municipality does not play an effective role in implementing these new regulations systematically.

Currently, the modern neighborhoods have a big size of a population, and the new residents of these areas are extremely different with regard to the types and levels of their jobs in addition to their income. In general, the majority of public spaces have existed in a central area within the residential areas.

Locating public spaces in a central area is aimed at enabling most of the residents to reach these spaces without means of transportation.

While discussing the topic of open spaces with a municipality official belonging to the Park and Landscape Department, we posed the question: "What is the reason for the similarity among the majority of the parks located in modern neighborhoods with regard to their design features and building materials?" **He answered that**

Our main goal is to establish design consistency and harmony, which is essential to develop secure, prosperous, and beautiful cheerful public spaces. It is necessary to highlight that the designs of public spaces should be based on the awareness of many professional fields such as botany, construction, sewage, irrigation, and design standards. In fact, our objective is not limited to boosting the volume of greenery and the production of more places for public gatherings, but our objective also embraces the improvement and maintenance of the already established parks by installing more seats, sunshades, and swings. Besides, we are keen on making the present parks safer by establishing a bigger number of fences. Also, we intend to make them more enjoyable by establishing more playgrounds. For the purpose of transforming the garden into a more viable public space, we intend to lower the rates of water consumption and decrease the utilization of energy for irrigation. Additionally, we take into account the financial confinements by applying a least possible rate of regular maintenance after the primary scheme has been put into action (interview 2017, translated from Arabic).

It is necessary to highlight that the public spaces located in modern neighborhoods in Jeddah are unattractive and unappealing. The bigger attention paid to public spaces is expected to promote social integration and interaction within these spaces. In case of planning these spaces effectively, people will be more interested in gathering and interacting every day or every week.

According to the opinion of Manuel Castells mentioned in his writing 'The City and the Grassroots' published in 1983, the importance of residential clusters lies in bringing about a great social change (Goonewardena, 2004). Fortunately, the positive developments in the modern neighborhoods have led to an increase in the public awareness of the value of public spaces. Accordingly, several

individuals belonging to the local community have asked the government to support and implement other different development projects in Jeddah and to involve the private investors and companies in these projects so that they could be implemented within a short period of time. As a result, the municipality and other governmental bodies dealt energetically with these requests. In addition, these requests motivated the municipality and private investors to improve the neglected streets and open spaces. According to what was mentioned in an observation carried out by Talen in 2006 in America, considering the public requests for more developed public spaces has led to the development of more vital residential areas involving better levels of social interaction.

A designer, who has been recruited by the Municipality Contractor and has been responsible for the creation and preservation of open spaces in modern neighborhoods, was questioned: “Do you follow an unchangeable set of rules while designing an open space layout?” His answer was as follows:

There are not unchangeable regulations in connection with the design, structure, and form of public open spaces. In fact, each project should be based on a specific approach. While working out the plans of public spaces in prestigious neighborhoods, we are keen on adding beautiful attractive features and elements to the public parks. We are also keen on establishing a park with an optimum finish which complements and looks appropriate for the attractive physical features of the buildings in the surrounding residential areas. With regard to neighborhoods having small sizes of population, the majority of buildings existing there are villas linked with beautiful parks within the borders of the property, which can be made use of by residents for recreation. Simply, the most necessary element in residential areas is the presence of an open public space, which allows young people and grownups to play sports. In light of our gained knowledge and awareness, we have understood that the establishment of a small football field or a basketball court which can result in the occurrence of active recreation without causing annoying levels of noise. Also, they can act as central areas, which turn the previously abandoned open public spaces into vital spaces. Concerning the method of designing the parks, our major interest is the development of gardens embracing permanent recreational elements such as well-made benches, pergolas made of wood, and well-installed swings which can endure the great rates of humidity prevailing in Jeddah and eliminate the exposure to the sun rays. In addition, while choosing plants, we attentively select plants which are appropriate for local conditions and choose the ones which do not need excessive watering (interview 2017, translated from the Arabic Language).

5.6 The Features of Public Spaces in Modern Neighborhoods

According to the outcome of the visual survey and different case studies, there have been different features associated with the creation of public space. For example, the created public spaces can differ with regard to the size of the potential population accommodated, social conditions, and the

level of preservation. In fact, residential areas having a moderate population size have the greatest potential to encourage the occurrence of group activities in open areas. This presence of this positive feature in moderate population density neighborhoods, which might be absent in other neighborhoods, can be traced to the moderate social diversity mainly existing in these residential areas, which make social interaction much easier. Contrarily, highly-populated neighborhoods with an average of around two hundred residents per hectare witness excessive crowd and noise. Also, these neighborhoods are less secure than others due to being more vulnerable to the occurrence of crime and thefts. The prevalence of overcrowding and noise in highly-populated residential areas is expected to trigger several anti-social behaviors. Regarding residential areas with small population sizes including around 90 residents per hectare, they embrace several vacant open spaces.

The neighborhoods having big population sizes are not usually associated with specific borders or outlined districts. This chaotic environment definitely leads to the appearance of vulgar public attitudes and behaviors. For example, people in these areas become careless about the clearance of their wastes, and that is why most of these areas are frequently dirty despite the efforts of the municipality. Moreover, this has led to a dispute between those using these areas for recreation and the inhabitants of the nearby residential blocks, who feel their privacy is threatened by the outsiders. This makes the residents of highly-populated areas unwilling to maintain and support public open spaces. In areas where small population sizes exist, there is too much distance among buildings which results in the presence of broadly scattered abandoned spaces.

According to the results of the visual survey, it is obvious that the creation of public space can result in the provision of patterned public areas and landscapes in neighborhoods which can be smoothly developed and preserved. However, the creation of public space is not usually based on the principles of the importance of social interaction. Accordingly, most of the existing public spaces do not greatly help to support social activities. In this regard, most of the existing public spaces tackled in the case studies are associated with similar spatial features. One of these features is the detachment from nearby residential buildings using broad streets accompanied by small sidewalks which consequently dissuade residents to reach these spaces or have group physical activities such as walking, jogging, etc.

From an environmental perspective, the major issue of the severe climate prevailing in Jeddah nearly throughout the year has not been sufficiently taken into account while preparing the design of public spaces. In fact, the majority of public spaces are frequently subject to high levels of solar heat. Consequently, the weather in these areas adversely impacts their quality and diminishes their potential to attract and satisfy visitors or residents. It has been previously expressed that the application of international design standards while planning and implementing public spaces and their nearby buildings does not help to the establishment of a unique local identity and features. The negative aspects associated with public spaces arise from the ugly features of existing building

edges, the frequent absence of appropriate proportions of public spaces to the heights of the nearby buildings, the non-existence of local identity, and the inadequacy of harmony among existing public spaces and surrounding areas. These negative aspects have aborted the attempts of the municipality to create beautiful spatial features in these spaces. The majority of these spaces embrace trees, sitting areas, landscaped areas, and walking trails which are arranged in a manner which hinders the occurrence of active recreation. Moreover, this ineffective arrangement does not support the physical features of these spaces. Unfortunately, a small number of these spaces have helped to satisfy residents and promote social integration (Schmidt, 2005).

Unluckily, the part of local societies in promoting and preserving public spaces existing in their neighborhoods is ineffective. The local communities are discouraged to take part in the development of public spaces because the officials and specialists of the municipality do not take into consideration the opinions and needs of residents. These officials and specialists take any decisions with regard to the development of public spaces based on their views only. Residents feel that their hopes and expectations regarding their urban environment are neglected. So the municipality will never be able to set up a glamorous satisfying urban environment. With the course of time, the features of most of the public spaces are declining due to the wide-scale absence of residents' care about these spaces. The decline in the quality of these spaces can be attributed to the insufficiency of financial resources owned by the governmental authorities that are in charge of the creation of public spaces. In light of the inadequacy of the proper establishment and maintenance of public spaces in neighborhoods, the users of these spaces have decreased drastically. Due to being dissatisfied with these spaces, irresponsible attitudes have been displayed by several residents towards these spaces. For example, a big segment of residents has become no longer interested in throwing rubbish in litter bins. That is why many of these spaces have turned into dirty areas. In addition, other chaotic activities have become prevalent in these spaces such as violence and destruction of private or public property. Some residents have tended to illegally utilize public places. Based on different case studies, there is a great discrepancy in the quality of Jeddah's public spaces.

With regard to the development of the features of public spaces, several people believe that the best method for the creation of more effective public spaces is involving residents in this process and taking their opinions into account. In other words, the views and expectations of residents should constitute an integral element of the public space improvement plans. The conclusions of this research promote the implementation of this recommendation. If residents realize the value of public spaces in their social life, they will be willing to play an effective role in their development and improvement. If the public spaces are properly developed and improved, the social life of the residents will improve, as they will have the chance to take part in-group activities and have interesting social gatherings every day. In some residential areas, residents gather in mosques where they are capable of collecting money for the purpose of improving some public spaces in their neighborhoods. Our conclusions indicate that the features of public spaces in the modern

neighborhood can be easily improved if residents take part in the preservation and development of these spaces.

5.7 Summary

The objective of this chapter is demonstrating how the fundamentals and principles of modern planning, design, and construction resulted in an ineffective residential atmosphere and impractical urban areas. The newly developed regulations in connection with the establishment of new buildings such as separation and zoning brought about radical changes in the socio-spatial structure, resulting in higher degrees of social disintegration and dislocation. Consequently, this greatly caused changes in the features of the public area dimensions within the city and its new neighborhoods. The reliance on the methods of physical planning, which results in ineffectiveness in the creation of modern neighborhoods and public spaces, is regarded as the major cause of this problem. As a result, it is important to consider that 'technical and diagrammatic perspectives' are sufficient for dealing with the complicatedness of social and urban issues. According to Lange (2005), Madanipour (2010), Punter (2010), and others, improving the design features of public spaces necessitates the development of a practical scheme which meets people's needs and complies with the socio-cultural, spatial, and political perspectives which are associated with the creation of public space and the planning of residential areas and their features.

In addition, these unsatisfactory features result from the selection of ineffective methods for establishing and preserving these spaces. In fact, the decline in the features of public spaces can be briefly traced to the reliance on several inefficient designers in the process of creating public spaces, the provision of improper maintenance and management services, and the ignorance of the residents' opinions about how to improve these spaces. As a result, many residents have tended to be careless about the maintenance of cleanliness in these spaces.

Accordingly, the creators and governors of public spaces in modern neighborhoods have to be initially aware of the current condition and status of these spaces. According to Punter (2007), the officials should come up with effective methods for motivating residents to take part in supporting and preserving the public spaces existing near their neighborhoods. Improving the features of public spaces is also possible if the municipality officials locate public spaces in reachable areas and make them more attractive, cheerful, secure, and quiet. The officials should always remember that public spaces should embrace features which encourage social interaction and recreation.

CHAPTER SIX

PATTERN OF OPEN SPACES USE AND SOCIAL INTERACTION

CHAPTER SIX

PATTERN OF OPEN SPACES USE AND SOCIAL INTERACTION

6.1 Introduction

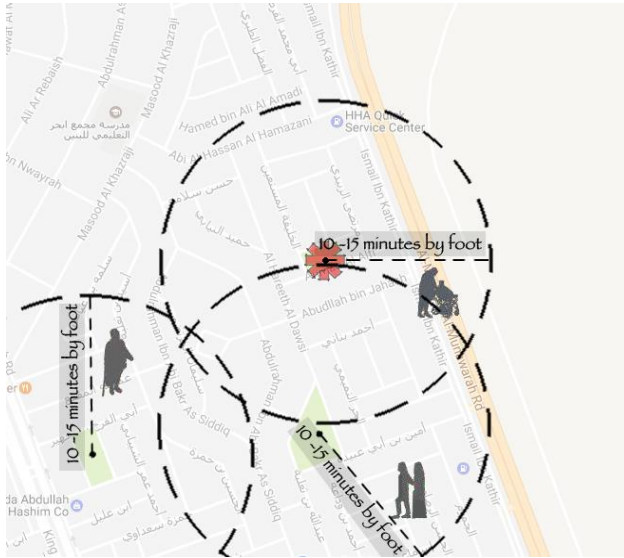
This chapter explores the social interactions and usage patterns of open space at the selected case study locations in city of Jeddah adopted for this study. The activities and usage patterns observed that would contribute to revealing social interactions of users in open spaces were observed in 2016 and 2017 by the researcher, and the methods used are explained in Chapter 4. The motivations for conducting this study were to explore when, why, and how users socially interact in designed public open spaces in the city of Jeddah urban context, because this has not been adequately studied in previous studies. In Jeddah, the urban context provides a big range of open space sites that should reveal usage patterns, as explained in the previous chapter.

However, this evaluation of the social behavior of users in open spaces in Jeddah has shown that there are also obstacles to the urban context of social interaction in this region due to climate, cultural, religious, social, and gender effects that have been discussed earlier. Other barriers confronted by users of open spaces in this research have spotlighted the barriers of poor design, facilities, and maintenance which hinder providing user needs. However, despite these factors that affect usage patterns, these open spaces are often used by both Saudis and non-Saudis in their leisure time, which gives them many experiences that greatly influence their life. What do they seek, and what they need from these public open spaces to interact socially?

This chapter investigates the patterns of use, and thus the social interaction of users in open spaces through observations and interviews with the users in the selected case study open spaces in the city of Jeddah. The aim was to plug the gap in knowledge in the literature review on this topic. This evaluation of social life in each case study space includes when the open space is used and how each open space is used.

6.2 Al Basateen plaza

Figure 6-1 Service area map



Service area map:

The nearest open spaces are in a range of 1 to 2 km, equivalent to 15-minute walk to the first space, and 30-minute walk to the second one.

Figure 6-2 Movement and accessibility



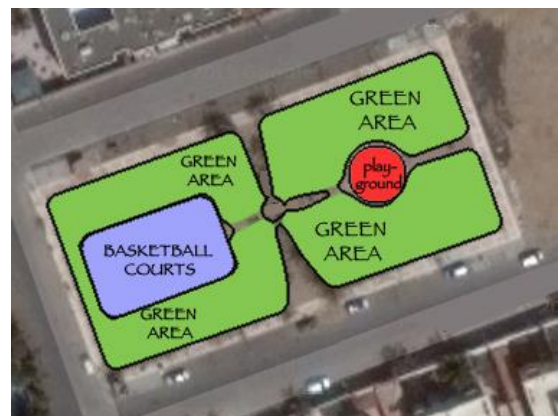
Movement and accessibility: The presence of two car roads containing high density of movement causes the partial isolation of the open space from the residential area facing the open space. In addition, there is another road which also leads to isolation because of its big width (10m).

Table 6-1 Table of the open space contents

Space	al basateen
Sitting area	X
Playground	X
Green areas	1450 m2
Sport field	X
Pergola	
Commercial activity	
Social activity	
Night lighting	X
Accessible	
Total area	3740 m2

Table of the open space contents: The existence of the basketball court, playground, and night lighting helps to use the space, but the absence of sun shades reduce the use of the open space during the day, especially in summer.

Figure 6-3 Elements of the open space



Elements of the open space: The grass covers a large area of the space (not in a bad condition), and pathways connect the entrances to the space elements, the basketball court, and the playground.

Figure 6-4 Land uses of surrounding area



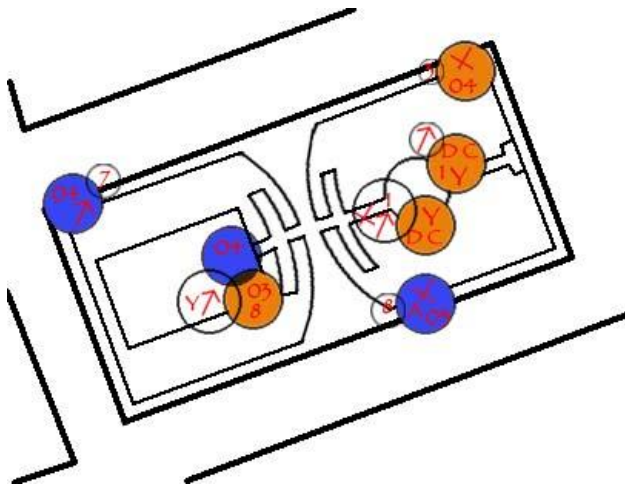
keymap

● Saudi	DC Dependent child
● Non-Saudi	IC Independent child
○ Individual	Y Young
○ Two people	A Adult
○ More than two people	O3 Over 30 age
↑ Male	O4 Over 40 age
+ Female	1 Playground
	2 Meeting
	3 Walk
	4 Rest
	5 Caring for people
	6 Access
	7 Waiting
	8 Sport

Land uses of surrounding area: The space is surrounded by medium-density residential areas (residential villas). In addition, the space is connected to a white land dedicated to be a social service building for the residential neighborhood.

6.2.1 Social studies

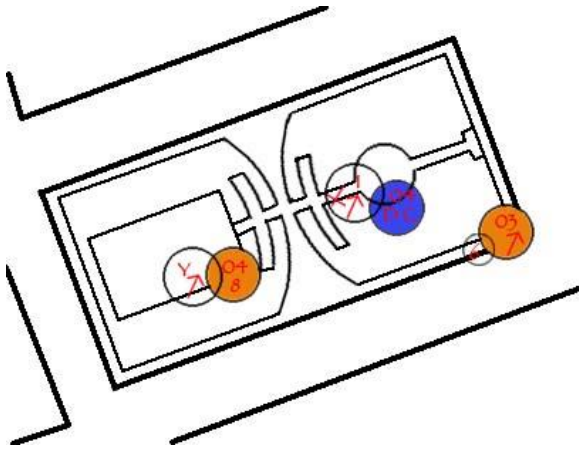
Figure 6-5



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4 to 5 pm:

The number of users is considered acceptable for the day time, due to the good weather in January, in addition to the weekend. We also notice the presence of most users in the areas of children's playgrounds and the basketball court, as well as the presence of a Saudi man walking, another non-Saudi person using the space to pass to the main street, and a Saudi man waiting for his friend in the edge of the space.

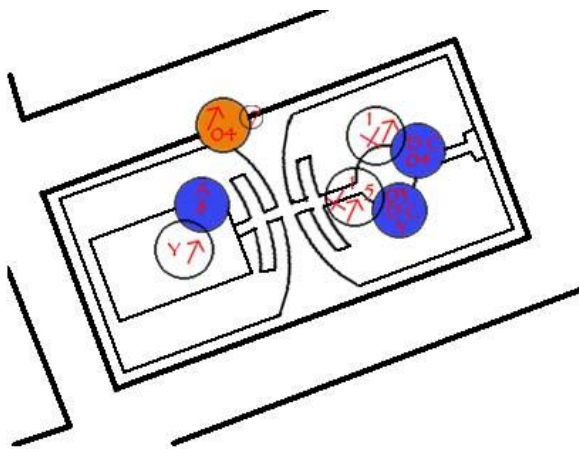
Figure 6-6



2 - During the week **8 March** from 7 to 8 pm:

Due to the moderate weather in March especially at night, we notice that there is a large number of non-Saudi people playing basketball, as well as a Saudi family using the playground area, and a non-Saudi person crossing the space to the main street. There is only one lady in the site with her husband and children, due to the lack of the sense of secure in the space at night during the week.

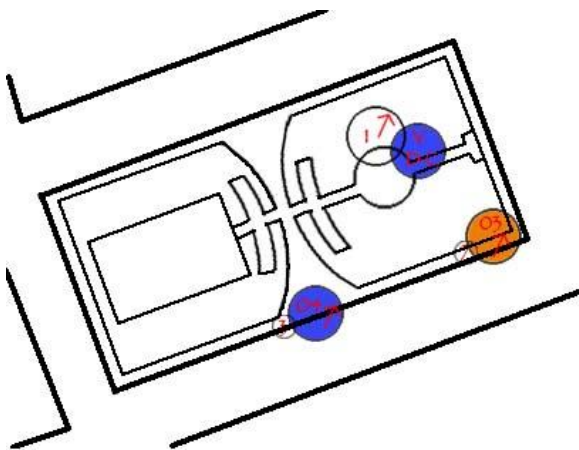
Figure 6-7



3- Weekend **13 May** from 5-6 pm:

In May, the temperature begins to rise; therefore, most Jeddah people prefer to use the open spaces just before sunset (the sunset at 7:00 pm). The basketball court is used by Saudi players only. The playground is used by two groups of Saudis, the majority of which is women. There is also a non-Saudi person waiting for non-Saudi group on one side of the space.

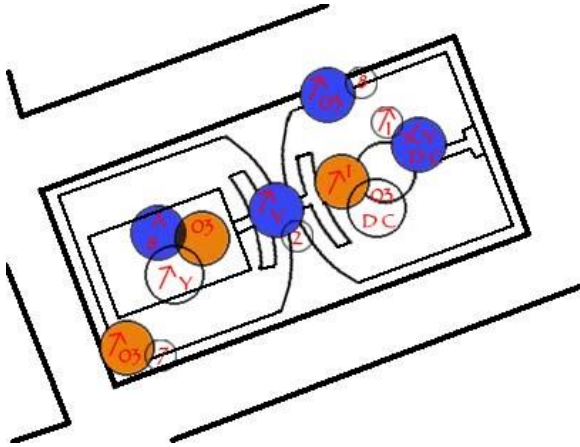
Figure 6-8



4- During the week **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

Due to the rise of temperature and humidity in July even at night, in addition to the lack of the sense of secure in the space because of the quietness of the area at night, we notice the low number of the space users, and the lack of female presence. A number of Saudi men with their children are using the playgrounds. A Saudi person is using the space to cross from the main street to his house, and a non-Saudi person is waiting for a Saudi person on one side of the space.

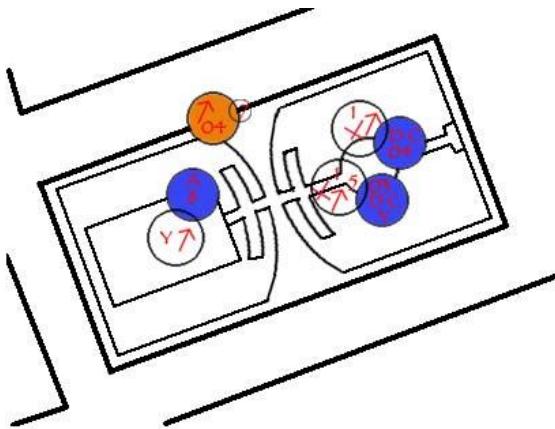
Figure 6-9



5- Weekend **23 September** from 4-5 pm:

In Jeddah, the weather begins to be moderate in September, motivating people to use open spaces, especially at the weekend. Therefore, there are two families that share the playgrounds area (one Saudi and the other non-Saudi), and a group of Saudi players playing basketball with a group of non-Saudi players. The sitting area is used by two Saudi men, as well as two non-Saudi people are waiting for a Saudi young man on one side of the space, and a Saudi person is running on the other side of the space.

Figure 6-10



6 - During the week **6 November** from 7-8 pm:

In November, the weather is at its best in Jeddah, which leads people to use the open spaces, even during the week, but we notice that there is no female presence at night because of the quietness of the area. Two non-Saudis are meeting on one side of the space, another two people, one non-Saudi and the other Saudi, are using the sitting area, and a group of Saudi players and a group of non-Saudis are playing in the basketball court.

Figure 6-11



1- There is no clear separation among the materials of the space floor (the pavement, grass, and basketball floor). Buildings overlooking to the space are two or three floors maximum.

Figure 6-12



2- The grass is in an acceptable condition, while the floor of the basketball is in a bad condition.

Figure 6-13



3- Good design of the lighting element, despite the non - functional design of the sitting area.

Figure 6-14



4- The palm trees are in a good condition, giving some shade in the space.

Figure 6-15



5- The playground area is without shading elements, in addition to the absence of trees or shrubs, resulting in the difficulty of using the space during the day time. There are also no sitting areas for the companions of children, which reduces the social interaction in the playground.

Figure 6-16



6- The construction works of the residential buildings in the north of the space are to raise the fence, and to close the windows overlooking the space.

Figure 6-17



7- In east of the space, there is a white land (dedicated to the social service building). Currently, the site on the eastern side is visually open to the highway.

Figure 6-18



8. The residential buildings on the northern side of the space are designed with bad colors, and they do not contain windows overlooking the space. A wide street (7.5 meters wide in addition to parking spaces 2.50 meters wide) containing medium density of movement contributes to higher temperatures, reducing the shade, and isolating the space from the residential area.

Figure 6-19



9- The construction waste and a poorly covered electric generator cause danger to users. The presence of parking lots contributes to attracting people from the outside.

Figure 6-20



10- The bad design of the sitting area at the corners of the space and the presence of electricity cans on the western side of the space lead to the isolation of the space in the western side.

Figure 6-21



11- The bad design, materials, and poor maintenance of the trash bin make it unattractive to use.

Figure 6-22



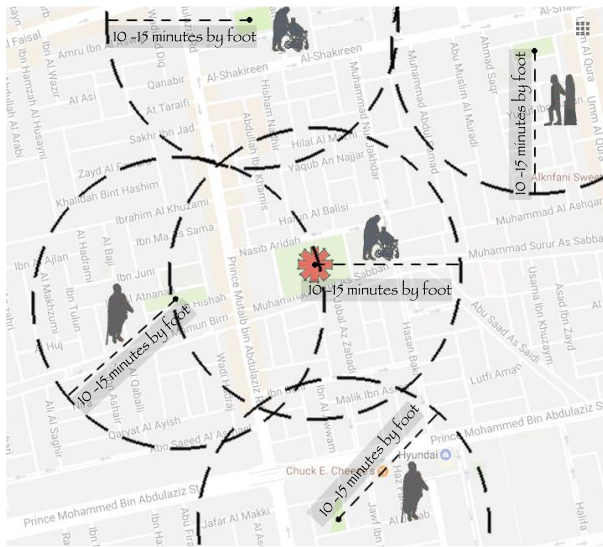
12- The pathways are not designed or functional, and the sitting areas are not shaded.

6.2.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Basateen plaza

- 1- The space is not linked to other nearby open spaces (open spaces system). Creating an open space system would increase the attractiveness of the space, facilitate movement among them, and support the use of the residents of neighboring areas.
- 2- The space is separated from the residential areas by wide streets with high and medium density, and no barriers separate between the street and the space. Therefore, the accessibility and movement of children are difficult and unsafe inside. The quantity of asphalt increases the temperature, and the distance between the buildings and space reduces the shadow in the space, which reduces the sense of comfort in the use of the space.
- 3- The big area of grass is expensive and difficult to maintain, in addition to the lack of functional design of pathways and sitting area, which has lost its role in helping to develop social relations between users.
- 4- The space is surrounded by residential buildings, which means there is no other activity (commercial, for example), making the use of the space exclusive to the neighbors.
- 5- Palm trees help to have little shade in some areas, and the lighting elements help to illuminate the space at night, but it did not increase the use of space due to the quietness of the area.
- 6- The area of playground in the space is the most attractive point to develop social relations among the users, but the absence of shading elements or sitting areas around the playground in Al-Basateen plaza make it lose this feature.

6.3 Al Aqsan plaza

Figure 6-23 Service area map



Service area map:

There are four spaces near to the Al Aqsan space. One of them is 1 km away, two of them are less than 2 km away, and the fourth is located in 2.5 km away, equivalent to 25-minute walk.

Table 9 Table of the open space contents

Space	Alaqsan plaza
Sitting area	X
Playground	X
Green areas	11300 m ²
Sport field	
Pergola	X
Commercial activity	
Social activity	
Night lighting	X
Accessible	
Total area	24600 m ²

Table of the open space contents: The sitting area helps to attract users to the Civil Affairs Agency during the morning, especially in the presence of shaded areas. The presence of shading elements in children's playgrounds helps to attract families during the day. The location of the space and the presence of good lighting help to attract users at night, but the lack of a sport field leads to the lack of the youth category in the space.

Figure 6-24 Movement and accessibility



Movement and accessibility:

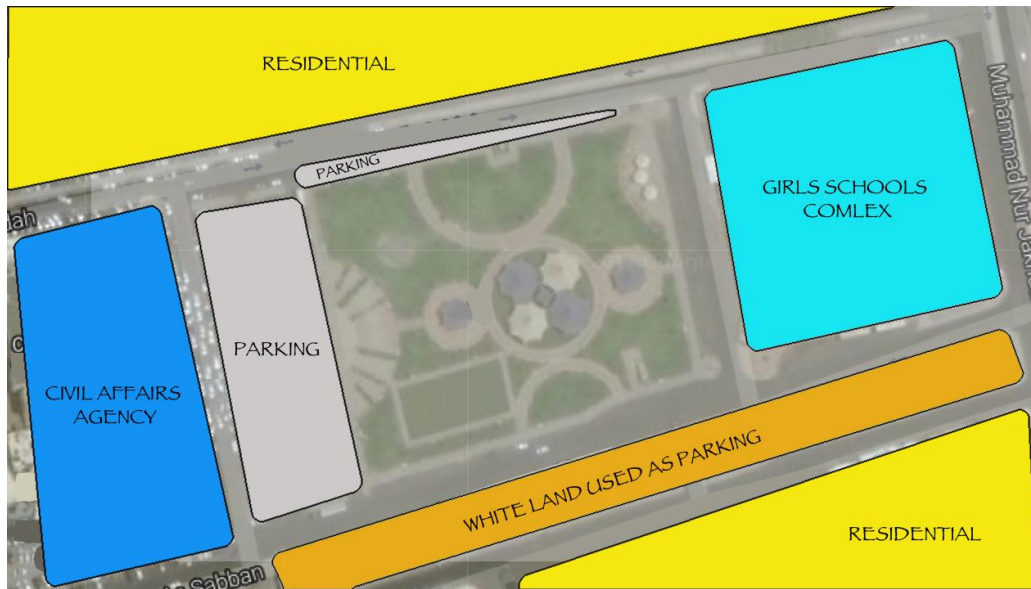
The space is surrounded by four roads; two of them are main, high speed, and high traffic density. The other two roads have a lower traffic density especially during the night. This resulted in the isolation of space from the surrounding buildings, and made access to space difficult.

Figure 6-25 Elements of the open space



Elements of the open space: The grass (not in a bad condition) covers almost half of the space area. There is a big-shaded children's playground area, in addition to three sitting areas. Corridors taking the aesthetic form more than the functional form link these elements.

Figure 6-26 Land uses of surrounding area



Land uses of surrounding area: Surrounding the space from the north and south, there are high density residential areas, and on the western side, there is the Civil Affairs Agency in addition to a parking spaces. In the east, there is a Girls' School Complex.

keymap

● Saudi	DC Dependent child
● Non-Saudi	IC Independent child
○ Individual	Y Young
○ Two people	A Adult
○ More than two people	O3 Over 30 age
↑ Male	O4 Over 40 age
+ Female	1 Playground
	2 Meeting
	3 Walk
	4 Rest
	5 Caring for people
	6 Access
	7 Waiting
	8 Sport

6.3.1 Social studies

Figure 6-27

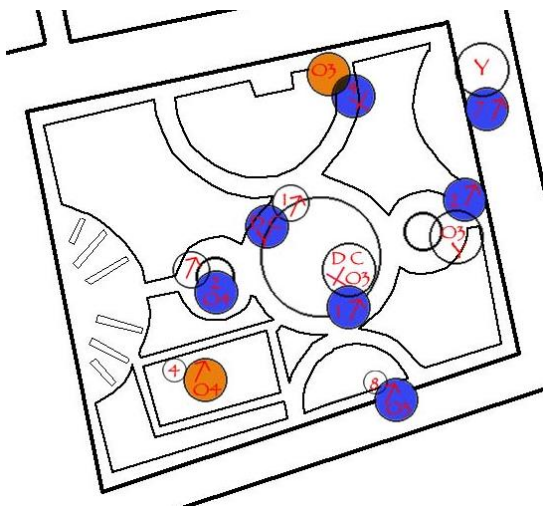
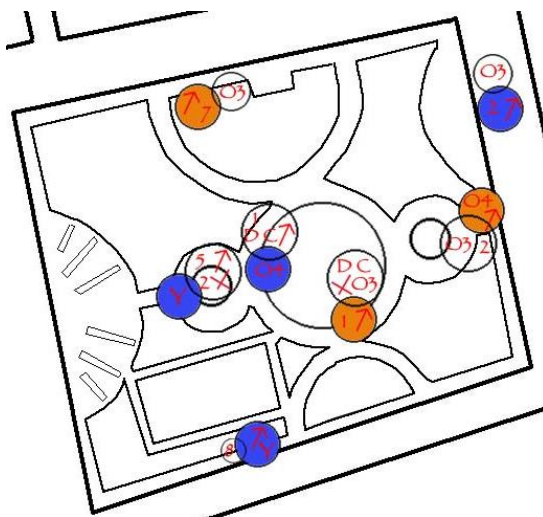


Figure 6-28



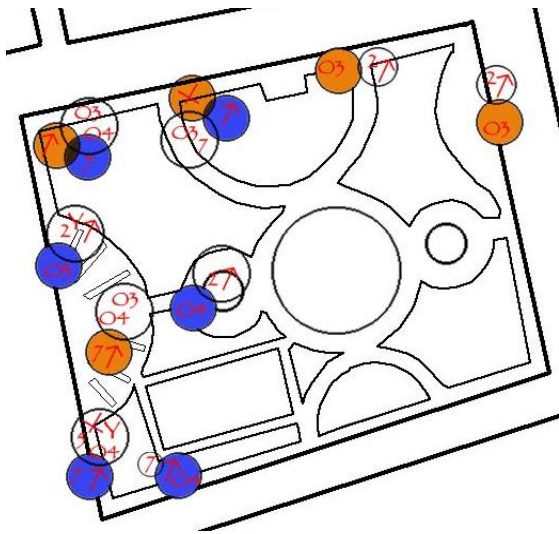
1- Weekend **14 January** from 4-5 pm:

The space is used by a large number of users at this time of year, especially in the weekend; most of them are groups of Saudis with their children in the playground area. There are also seven young Saudi men waiting for a friend in the eastern sitting area, in addition to two women (one Saudi and the other is non-Saudi) speaking in the north of the space. A Saudi man practices sports at the edge of the space; a non-Saudi man sits on the grass; and the sitting areas used by two groups of Saudi men.

2- During the week **8 March** from 7-8 pm:

Even though we are during the week, only mild weather results in a large number of users in the space. There is a non-Saudi family in the area of children's playgrounds, along with a Saudi man in the 40s with his children. The sitting areas in the middle of the space are busy with a group of non-Saudis, while the other sitting area is busy with a Saudi family that takes care of an old lady. A young Saudi is practicing sport in the edge of the space, and also two young Saudis are meeting in the eastern sitting area, while a young non-Saudi is waiting for someone in the north of the space.

Figure 6-29

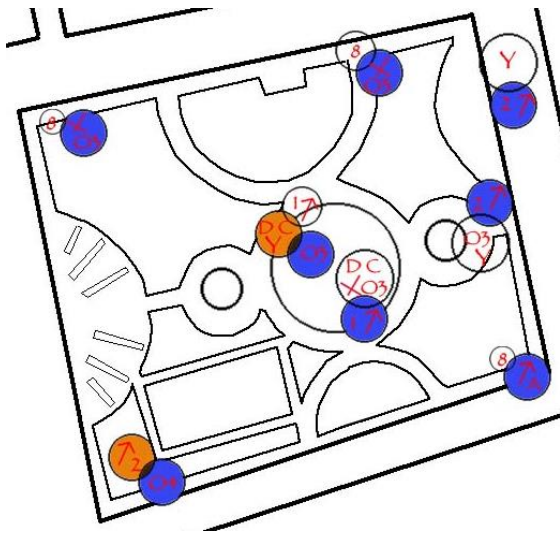


3- During the week **13 May** from 1-2 pm:

The space is next to the Civil Affairs Agency, making it crowded in the morning during the week. The space users are different at this time of the day. They are users of the Civil Affairs Agency, mostly men, not neighbors, and most of them use the western part of the space.

There are large groups of Saudis waiting in the western part of the space; a group of young non-Saudis, and a mixed group of Saudis and non-Saudis in the north-west. There is a group of other non-Saudi men in the north of the space, along with a group of Saudi and non-Saudi men and women are reviewing some papers in the eastern part of the space, while two non-Saudis are meeting in the sitting area.

Figure 6-30

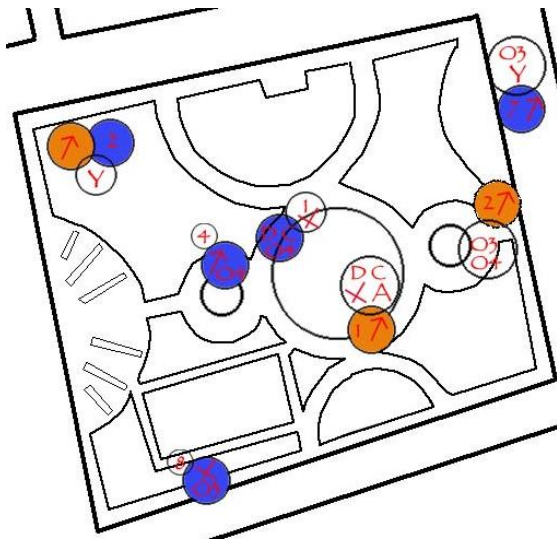


4- Weekend **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

Despite the heat of the weather, there is a good number of users (25 users) in the space because of the weekend and the good lighting at night, in addition to the area and the location of the space, which attract users from other areas.

There is a Saudi family in the area of the children's playgrounds with their children, and there is a baby-sitter supervising a child. There is a group of young Saudis meeting in the sitting area in the middle of the space, in addition to two girls and a young Saudi man practicing sport at the edges of the space. A number of young Saudis are using the eastern sitting area, in addition to a group of Saudi and non-Saudi men in the southwestern corner of the space.

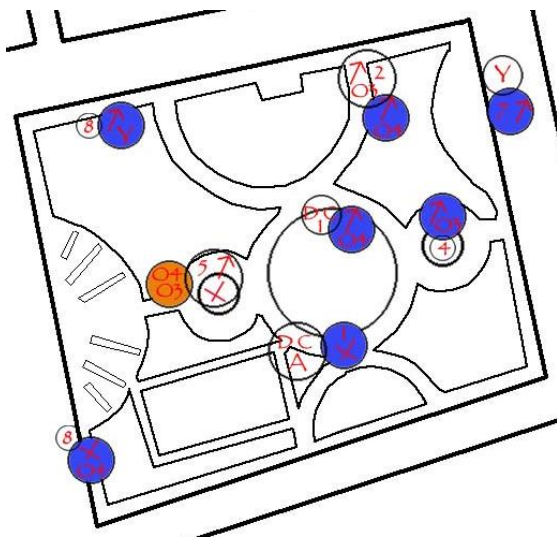
Figure 6-31



5- During the week 23 **September** from 4-5 pm:

The mild weather, in addition to the area and the location of the space, contributed to the presence of 19 users of the space at this time. There a mother watching her child in the area of children's playgrounds, next to a non-Saudi family using the playgrounds. There is also a lady practicing sport at the edges of the space, and a group of Saudis waiting for their friend in the eastern seating area. A group of non-Saudi men are sitting in the middle of space, while a man is relaxing in the other sitting area. A Saudi man and another non-Saudi man are talking in the northwest corner of the space.

Figure 6-32



6- Weekend **6 November** from 7-8 pm:

There is a large number of users in the space (22 users) because the weather is good in November.

Two Saudis are waiting for their friend in the eastern seating area. There is a man with his son in the playground area, next to a group of Saudi women and their children. Saudi young men and women are practicing sport at the edges of the space, and a group of Saudi men are meeting in the north of the space. A group of non-Saudi men and women are using the sitting area in the middle of the space, and a Saudi man is sitting in the other sitting area.

Figure 6-33



1- The Civil Affairs Agency building consists of two floors. The parking area of the Civil Affairs Agency is not shaded, and the large area of asphalt increases the temperature in summer.

Figure 6-34



2- The height difference between the parking area and the floor of the space (30 cm high) makes the access to the space difficult. The pavement is in a good condition and good design, and the colors are acceptable.

Figure 6-35



3- The grass in the edges of the space is in a bad condition due to the large use by the Civil Affairs Agency users. There are no trees or shading elements except in the playground. We notice the good design of the shading elements in the playground area.

Figure 6-36



4- The buildings overlooking the space from the north side are 3 floors high, but the width of the street (12 meters) leads to the lack of the use of the buildings in shading the space. The wide street causes the space to be isolated from the overlooking buildings.

Figure 6-37



5- The playground area contains many varied games. It is shaded and well-lit at night, and contains sitting areas, making it an attractive and good platform for social interaction between children's companions, in addition to the good level of maintenance and cleanliness.

Figure 6-38



6- There is a difference of level in space, but it is not well-used. A large area of the space can be exploited by the variety of activities, and this can promote social interaction. The presence of areas that are not designed in the space has an effect on its attractiveness.

Figure 6-39



7- The shrubs are in a good condition but have not been used well by the design. The elements of lighting are in a good condition and have an acceptable design. We notice the lack of good integration in design between the pavement and the grass (large grass area or large pavement area).

Figure 6-40



8- The commercial activity is surrounding the space, but it does not reflect positively on the space, because of the wide street. The lack of harmony of the design of buildings surrounding the space influences the attractiveness of the space. There are high-density residential buildings, but they lack social communication.

Figure 6-41



9- There are some areas with a random design; they do not serve the space functionally or aesthetically. Dangerous areas (generators) are not covered safely, which requires supervising children. The grass is in a good condition in some areas due to the low use.

Figure 6-42



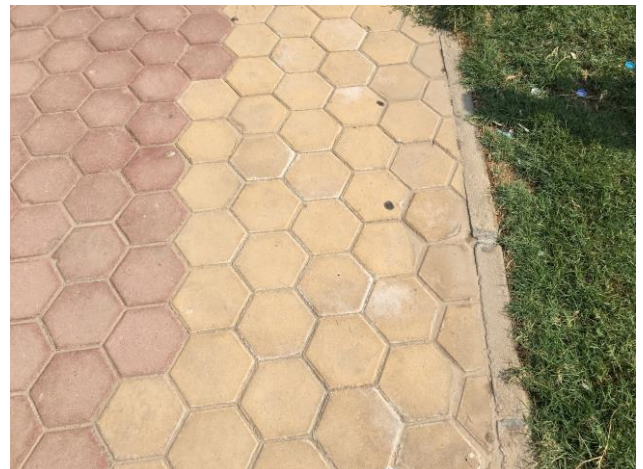
10- There are non-functional pathways, giving an aesthetic touch only. The pathways connect the space elements poorly, so most users walk over the grass. The non-functional paths blur the design and the elements of the space. The good distribution of lighting elements makes the space well-lit at night.

Figure 6-43



11- The absence of vertical green elements (trees or climbers) makes the space lose the aesthetic side and the shading. We notice the good design of the sitting elements; they are in a good condition but lack proper distribution in the space.

Figure 6-44



12- We notice the good design, consistent colors, and good condition of the pavement space. The grass condition is acceptable in some areas near the pathways, because the users do not have to walk on the grass.

6.3.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Aqsan plaza

1. Although there are other spaces near to the Al Aqsan plaza, they are not well-linked, in the sense that there is no open space system, which gives sovereignty to the public spaces in the area and increases the use of the residents of the neighboring areas, thus enhancing the social interaction of neighbors.
2. The high traffic density surrounding the space separates the space from the residential area overlooking buildings (although the neighbors try to use the space as much as possible).

The parking area in the eastern side increases the quantity of asphalt, thus reducing the shadow of the buildings and the combination of heat, which leads to a sense of discomfort in the space.

The noise of the heavy car movement gives a feeling of uneasiness, causing the unwillingness to talk or develop social relationships in the space.

3. There is a commercial activity near the space, but the wide streets and the high density of cars have separated the space from the commercial retail, in particular during the day.

At night, the space and commercial activity are connected, but not enough.

4. The absence of vertical green elements is the reason behind losing the sense of containment and the shadow, due to the large size of the space, thus making the use of the space during the day difficult, but the presence of good lighting at night contributes greatly to the attractiveness of the space at night.
5. The design, elements, and area of playground area contribute greatly to the attractiveness of the space, and make it a good platform for social interaction. In addition, the good maintenance and the elements of shading help to make the playground area a comfortable place during the day. Moreover, the interaction among children in the playground area contributes to the development of interaction among the children's families.
6. The presence of the Civil Affairs Agency and the Girls' School Complex has resulted in the presence of other personalities of the space in the daytime during the week. The space has become a place for the assembly of the Civil Affairs Agency users, whether Saudis or non-Saudis, thus leading to social interaction. The Girls' School Complex has helped to develop interaction among the drivers (mostly non-Saudis) who wait for the girls as they leave school.
7. The design of the sitting areas has reduced the chances of social interaction in the space; they tend to give a sense of privacy more than connecting with people.

6.4 Al Rowa plaza

Figure 6-45 Service area map



Service area map:

The area surrounding al Rowa space lacks public spaces, as there are only two public spaces near the al Rowa space. The first space is approximately 2 km away (20-25 minutes walking), while the second is located 3 km away (30-35 minute walk).

Figure 6-46 Movement and accessibility:



Table 6-2 Table of the open space contents

Space	Al Rowa
Sitting area	X
Playground	X
Green areas	1882 m2
Sport field	X
Pergola	
Commercial activity	
Social activity	X
Night lighting	X
Accessible	
Total area	4683 m2

Table of the open space contents: The mosque in the Islamic culture is considered one of the most powerful social generators in society. Therefore, the presence of the mosque in the space is one of the motives of social interaction. In addition, the children's playground, sport field, sitting areas, and night lighting are attractive factors for the space, making the space a good platform for social interaction.

Movement and accessibility:

The space is surrounded by 3 car roads. One of them has a moderate movement density, but it is characterized by high speed. The other two roads have a low movement density and low speed. This has contributed to the accessibility of the space, and to the development a good relation between neighboring buildings and the space.

Figure 6-47 Elements of the open space

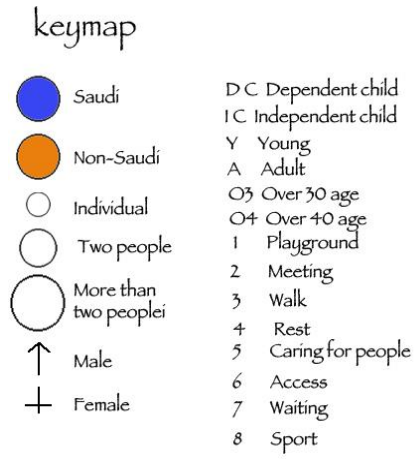


Elements of the open space: The presence of grass (in a good condition) has contributed to the attractiveness of space. In addition, the palms and trees have helped to reduce heat, forming a shade in the space and creating a sense of containment within the space. The mosque, the area of children’s playground (even if it is not shaded), and the sport field has contributed to the diversity of activities within the space, and thus the diversity of users.

Figure 6-48 Land uses of surrounding area

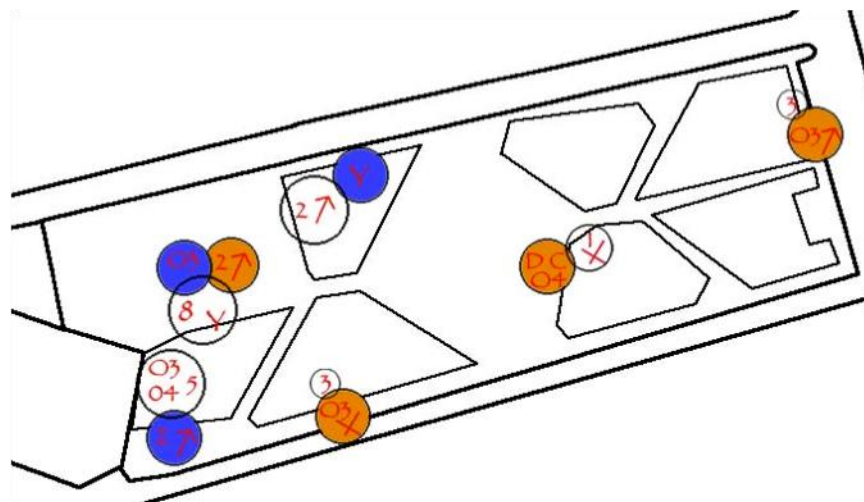


Land uses of surrounding area: The buildings overlooking the space from the north, south, and east are medium density residential buildings. A mosque and a parking area overlook the space from the west. The space is also surrounded by parking spaces from all sides.



6.4.1 Social studies

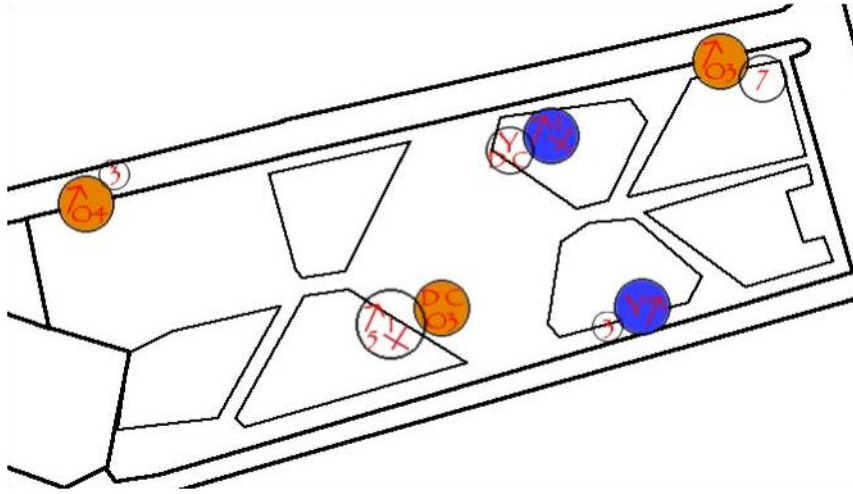
Figure 6-49



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4-5 pm:

The temperate weather and the weekend are factors that contributed to the presence of a good number of users in the space, especially with the variety of activities. We find a group of young Saudis and non-Saudis playing football on the sport field. In the area of children's playground, there is a mother and her child. There is a group of Saudis gather next to the mosque after the performance of the prayer, in addition to two young Saudis under the trees in the northern part of the space, and a non-Saudi man and a young lady practicing sport at the edges of the space.

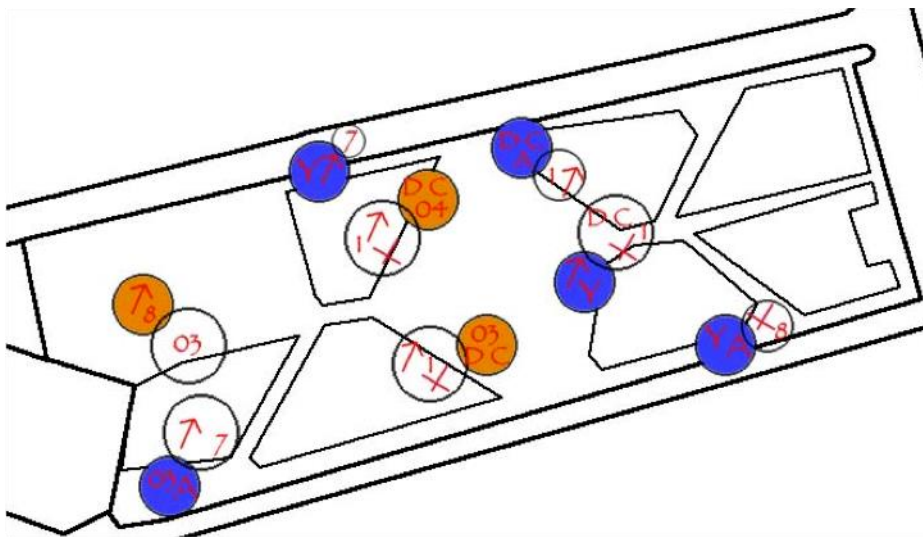
Figure 6-50



2- During the week **8 March** from 7-8 pm:

Since we are at night during the week, we notice a small number of space users due to the bad lighting. We find a non-Saudi man and a young Saudi practicing sports at the edges of the space. A non-Saudi family is also using the playground area, alongside a Saudi man and his daughter. Two non-Saudi men are also waiting in the northeast corner of the space.

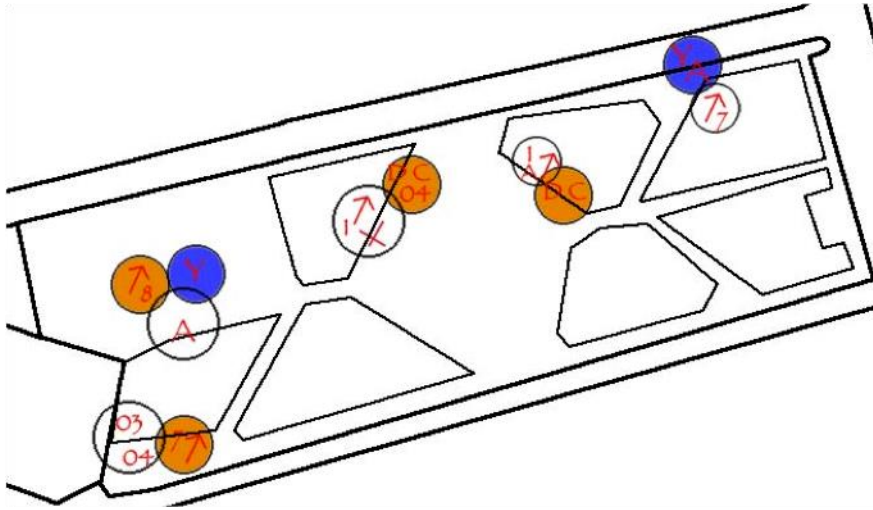
Figure 6-51



3- During the week **13 May** from 5-6 pm:

Due to the mild weather, we notice a good number of users in the daytime, although we are during the week. There is a large number of non-Saudi men on the sport field, while some Saudi men and young men are waiting next to the mosque. Two non-Saudi families, a Saudi family, and a young Saudi man with his younger brother also use the playground. In addition to a Saudi young man waiting for his driver, there are two Saudis young ladies practicing sport at the edges of the space.

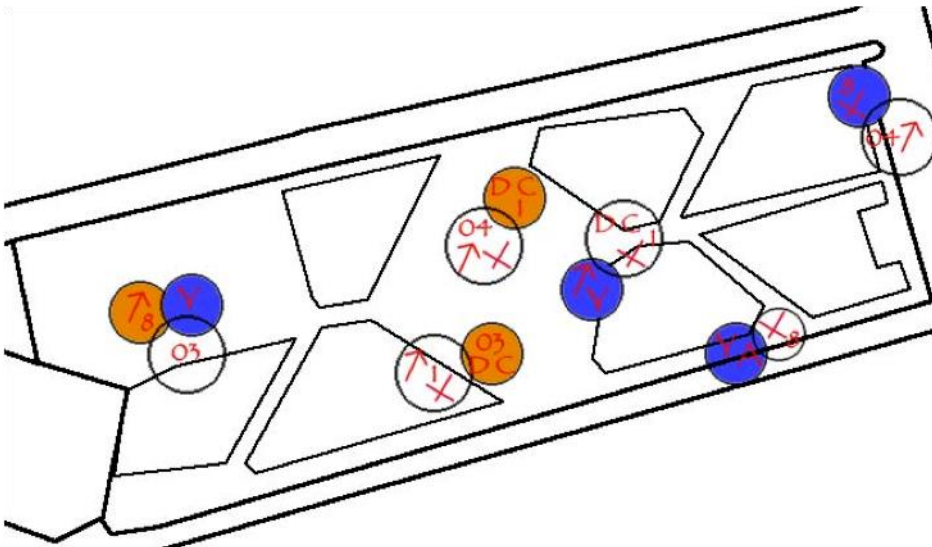
Figure 6-52



4- Weekend **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

Young people and adults are occupying the sport field in the summer at night because of the summer vacation, as lighting is increased in the space. So, at least 25 young Saudis and non-Saudis are using the sport field. A group of non-Saudi men is gathered next to the mosque waiting to pray, and a non-Saudi family is using the children's playground area, alongside a non-Saudi youth accompanying a child. Two young Saudis are waiting for their father in the north of the space.

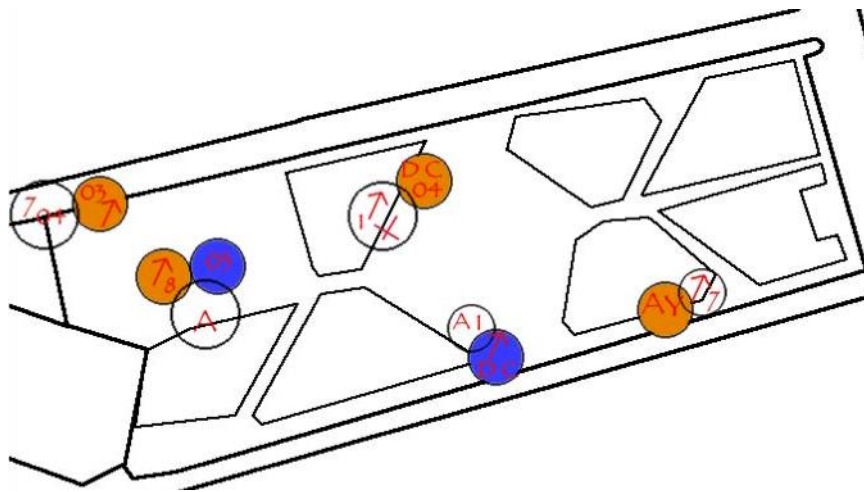
Figure 6-53



5- During the week **23 September** from 5-6 pm:

There is a good number of users in the space due to the good weather (at this time of the day), in addition to the summer vacation, although we are during the week. There are nearly 20 young Saudis and non-Saudis playing football on the sport field. There is also a Saudi family, in addition to two non-Saudi families in the area of children's playgrounds. A group of Saudi men and women is exercising at the edges of the space, and two young Saudis are doing some exercise in the southern part of the space.

Figure 6-54



6- Weekend **6 November** from 7-8 pm:

In November, the weather is good in Jeddah, but bad lighting in the space at night, compared to lighting during the daytime, has a negative impact on the number of space users. There are seven young Saudis and non-Saudis playing football in the sport field. A Saudi family is using the playground area next to a young Saudi and his younger brother. Two non-Saudi youths are also gathering under trees in the south of the space, in addition to a group of non-Saudi men in the north of the space.

Figure 6-55



1- The sport field: This is the most commonly used element in the space. It is also considered the best platform for social interaction in the space, as it attracts a large number of young people of different nationalities.

Figure 6-56



2- We notice the very bad design and condition of some buildings overlooking the space, in addition to the poor visual and physical connection with the space that has a negative impact on the interaction of the neighbors with the space.

Figure 6-57



3- The different of height and condition of the buildings overlooking the space led to the formation of bad view from the space, and the lack of user sense of visual comfort, thus affecting the attractiveness of the space. North-East corner of the space, and part of the parking area in the west of the space. We notice the bad relationship among the parking area, streets and the space.

Figure 6-58



4- The height difference between the space floor and the level of the street is 23 cm (a big difference), which negatively affects the accessibility of the space, especially for kids. There are parking spaces at the edges of the space, allowing the space to be used by non-neighbors. We notice the lack of good cleaning of the space, especially with the presence of unsafe materials.

Figure 6-59



5- The pavement is in a bad condition, and is improperly designed. The shrubs are in a good condition, but lack good distribution in the space. A small street has no dense car movement, which helps to connect the surrounding buildings with the space.

Figure 6-60



6- The children's playground area: It is large area that has diverse games, but without shading elements, in addition to the sandy floor that reduces the attractiveness of the area. The sitting areas are in a bad condition, in addition to the non-functional distribution. These conditions have negatively affected the intensity of the use of the playground area.

Figure 6-61



7- The street in the south of the space: It has low speed and low intensity. A 7-floor building is located in the south of the space. Most of the population is non-Saudi, in addition to a few children. We notice the bad connection between the street and the mosque.

Figure 6-62



8. The paucity of lighting elements in the space negatively affects the use of the space at night. The absence of vertical green elements around the sport field has led to the lack of shade during the day, but that allows a good visual connection with the playground area.

Figure 6-63



9- The sport field lacks trees or palms at its edges to provide shade during the daytime. The floor of the sport field consists of light-colored concrete, which causes a strong reflection of the sun light during the daytime. There is a bad and unsafe separation between the street and the sport field.

Figure 6-64



10- We notice the good condition of the plants (palm trees, shrubs, and grass) in some areas. In addition, they are used to separate the various activities of the space. There is no difference in the level of the space, making the control of activities area easy.

Figure 6-65



11- The gathering area at the entrance to the mosque: bad design, poor maintenance, and lack of cleanliness. It is possible to make it a platform for social interaction.

Figure 6-66



12- The presence of trees gives big areas of shade, but they are distributed in non-functional parts of the space (in areas that do not contain activities).

6.4.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Aqsan plaza

1. The lack of public spaces around the Al rowa space makes the space attractive (although their condition is not good) for many users from nearby areas, especially children and young people. The availability of parking has also helped to attract users from other areas.

Linking Al rowa space to neighboring spaces (making open space system) would reduce the sense of separation among spaces.

2. The narrow streets surrounding the space, in addition to the low cars speed, have greatly contributed to the neighbors' interaction with the space, increased the sense of safety, and reduced the noise of cars, thus enhancing the sense of comfort and the development of social relations.
3. There is a lack of commercial activity inside or around the space, but the presence of the mosque, and the sport field contributes in attracting users from other areas.
4. The difference of heights, conditions, and designs of the buildings overlooking the space has negatively impacted the panoramic view from inside the space, thus reducing the sense of pleasure in the space.
5. The existence of vertical green elements (palm trees and trees) has contributed to the presence of shaded areas in the space, giving a sense of containment. So, they can be good platforms for social interaction during the day, but they need to be improved.
6. The poor lighting in the space at night has reflected negatively on the number of users at night during the week, because of insecurity, especially for children and women.
7. The absence of shading elements in the area of the children's playground has reduced its use during the daytime, thus negatively affecting the role of the playground area in social interaction.
8. Young and adults people organize sports tournaments on the sport field during the summer vacation at night, because of the moderate weather which drives them to light the sport field (at their own expense), thus illuminating a large part of the space and increasing the number of users.
9. It is possible to attract worshipers in the mosque to the space after or before the prayer time, by preparing the areas in front of the mosque entrances, thus motivating them to use other elements of the space.
10. We notice a large number of non-Saudi users, because of their residence around the space or in the nearby areas.

6.5 Umar bin Abdul-Aziz plaza

Figure 6-67 Service area map

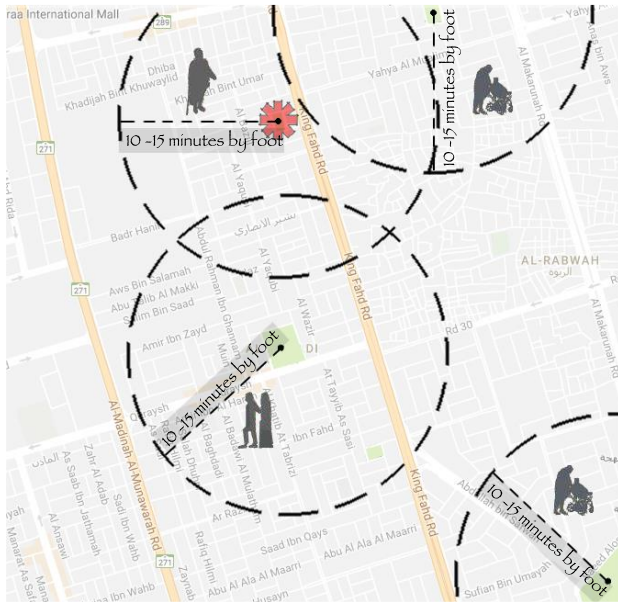


Table 6-68 Table of the open space contents

Space	Umar plaza
Sitting area	X
Playground	X
Green areas	1825 m2
Sport field	X
Pergola	
Commercial activity	
Social activity	
Night lighting	X
Accessible	
Total area	3412 m2

Table of the open space contents: The existence of the children's playground, basketball field, and night lighting motivates the use of the space, but the lack of shading elements reduced the use of the space during the daytime, especially in summer.

Service area map: There are 3 open spaces in the area of the space, but they are not close. Whereas the first is located in 1200 meters (15-20 minutes walking), the second is located in 1473 meters (20-22 minutes walking), while the third is located in 3500 meters (45 minutes of walk).

Figure 6-69 Movement and accessibility

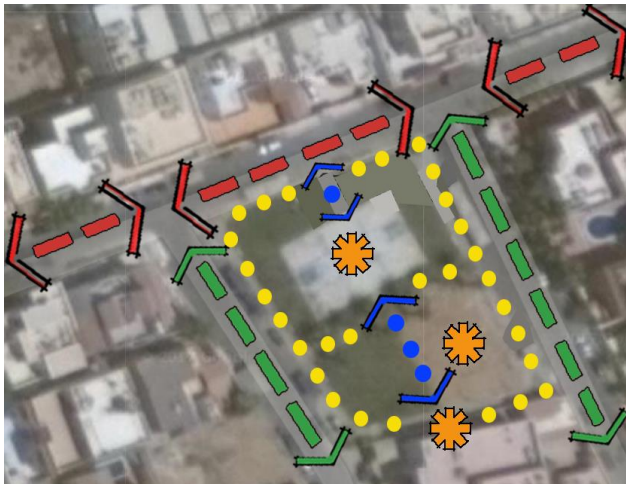
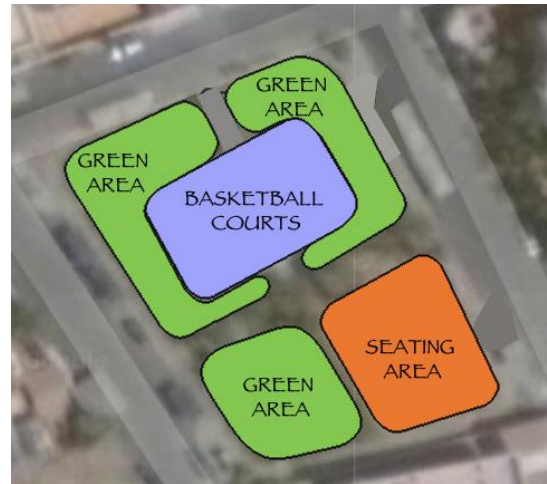


Figure 6-70 Elements of the open space



Movement and accessibility: The space is surrounded by a main street and has high speed and medium intensity, while the other streets in the east and west have less density and speed. In the south, there is a residential building.

Elements of the open space: The space is not big; nevertheless it has a basketball court, a children's playground area, and a good area of grass, in addition to pathways connecting the elements with the space entrances.

Figure 6-71 Land uses of the surrounding



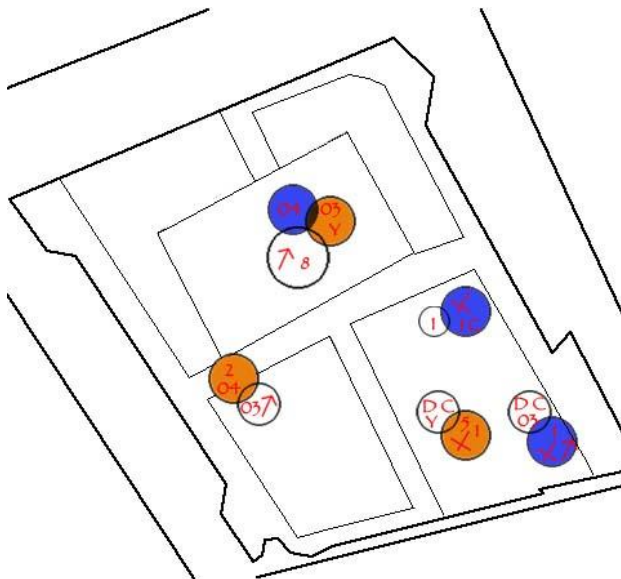
Land uses of the surrounding area: The space is surrounded by medium-density residential areas (residential villas). The space is also surrounded by parking spaces used by the residents of nearby residential buildings.

6.5.1 Social studies

keymap

- | | | | |
|--|----------------------|----|-------------------|
| | Saudi | DC | Dependent child |
| | Non-Saudi | IC | Independent child |
| | Individual | Y | Young |
| | Two people | A | Adult |
| | More than two people | O3 | Over 30 age |
| | Male | O4 | Over 40 age |
| | Female | 1 | Playground |
| | | 2 | Meeting |
| | | 3 | Walk |
| | | 4 | Rest |
| | | 5 | Caring for people |
| | | 6 | Access |
| | | 7 | Waiting |
| | | 8 | Sport |

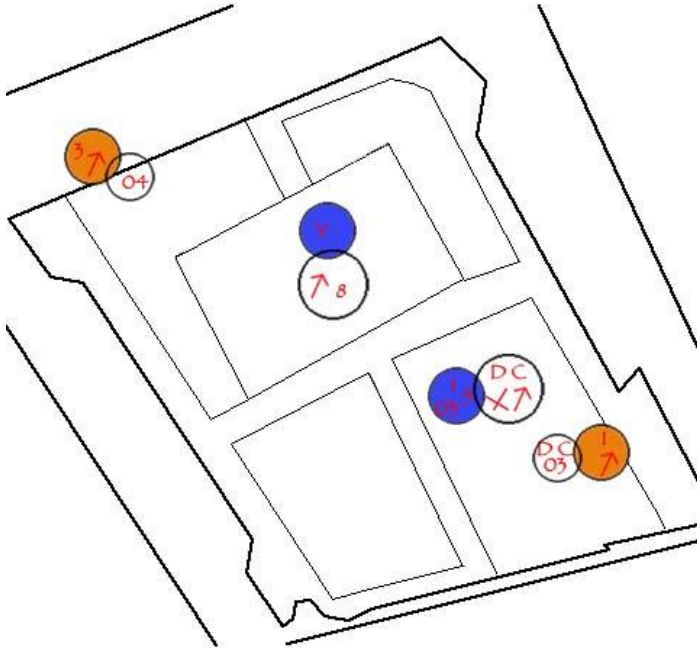
Figure 6-72



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4 to 5 pm:

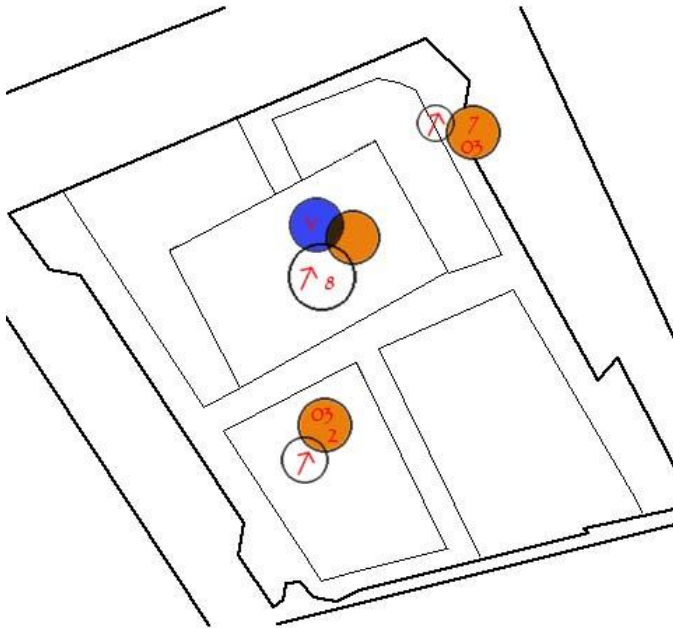
As a result of the good weather in January, there is an acceptable number of users in the space during the day. There is a group of Saudi and non-Saudi players in the basketball court, while the children's playground area is used by a child (10-12 years) alone, in addition to a Saudi man with his daughter, and a non-Saudi mother watching her daughter. Two non-Saudi men also are also meeting in the sitting area in the western part of the space.

Figure 6-73



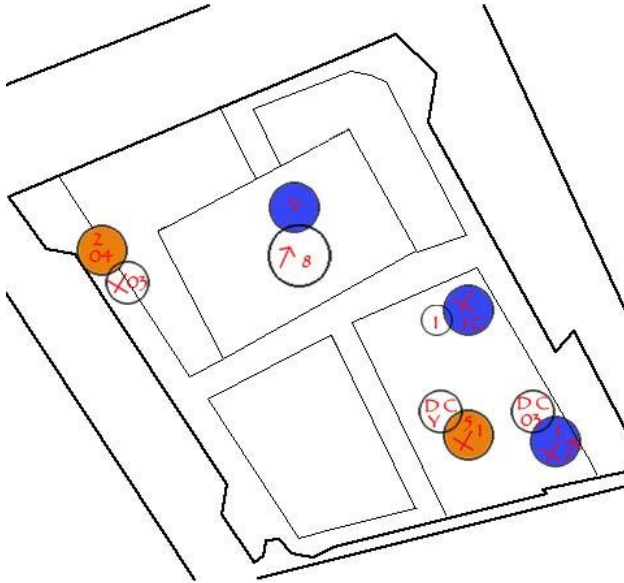
2- During the week **8 March** from 7 to 8 pm:
In the evening period in May, the weather is mild in Jeddah, in addition to the good lighting at night in the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz, so we find a good number of users (13 users) during the week. Two young non-Saudi men are walking in the northern part of the space, in addition a group of young Saudis playing in the basketball court, while there is a Saudi family (father, mother, and 3 children) in the children's playground area, next to a Saudi man with his son.

Figure 6-74



3- During the week **13 May** from 5-6 pm:
There is a good number of users in space at this time (10 users) because of the mild weather before the sunset in May, in addition to the shade provided by the palm trees in the space.
The basketball court is used by a group of Saudi and non-Saudi players. Two non-Saudi men are waiting for a Saudi man in the east of the space, while another two non-Saudi men are sitting in the western part of the space to watch the basketball match. Notice that the children's playground area is empty because it is not shaded at this time.

Figure 6-75

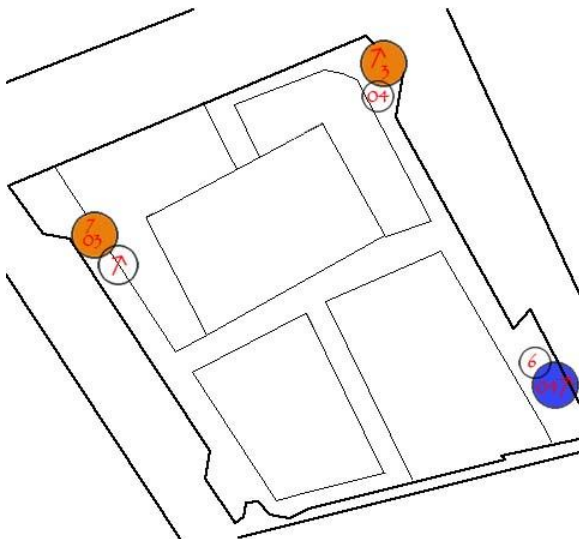


4- Weekend **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

In July, Jeddah residents prefer to use the open spaces at night because of high temperature and humidity, so we find an acceptable number of users (17 users) in the space compared to other times.

Two non-Saudi ladies are meeting in the western sitting area, watching a basketball match between a group of young Saudi men at the basketball court. A Saudi child, a non-Saudi girl with her younger brother, and a Saudi man watching his daughter, uses the playground.

Figure 6-76

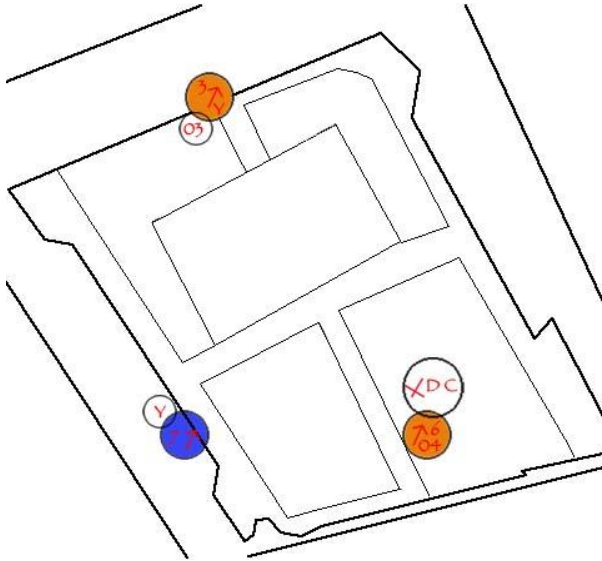


5- During the week **23 September** from 4-5 pm:

The weather starts to be moderate in September, but the temperature and humidity are high during the day, so we notice the small number of users of the open spaces in Jeddah during the day, especially in a small space such as the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz.

All the users are at the edges of the space, where there are two young non-Saudis waiting for a car in the northeast corner of the space, another non-Saudi man is walking in the east of the space, and a young Saudi man is using the space to cross into the residential building adjacent to the space.

Figure 6-77



6- Weekend **6 November** from 8-9 pm:

In Jeddah, the weather is very good in November, where people are using open spaces at all times, especially in the weekend, but small spaces, such as the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz, do not benefit from these conditions because of their size and location. The children's playground area is used by a non-Saudi family. A young Saudi man is waiting for his friend in the western part of the space, while two non-Saudi youths are walking in the north of the space.

Figure 6-78



1- There is a good number of palm trees in the space; they are in a good condition, and contain fruits.

Figure 6-79



2- The grass is good in some parts of the space, but it is bad in other parts because of the users.

Figure 6-80



3- Between the space and the overlooking buildings from the western side, there is a street 11 meters wide, in addition to parking spaces, but this street does not contain high density of cars. The neighbors use the public parking spaces as private parking spaces (this violates the municipal regulations).

Figure 6-81



4- From the south side of the space, there is a residential building (residential villa) consisting of two floors. There is no entrance of the residential building to the space; in other words, there is no direct connection between the building and the space.

Figure 6-82



5- The generators are adequately covered, but they remain dangerous, especially in the presence of children.

Figure 6-83



6- The buildings overlooking the space are medium-density residential buildings (villas), with harmonious heights and designs. The residential villas have a limited number of residents (each villa has one family), so the relationship between the residents is often good.

Figure 6-84



7- The lighting is good at night in the space, due to the appropriate distribution in the space, in addition to its good condition. The space is located in an area containing a population whose economic conditions are good, and this appears in the level of buildings and cars.

Figure 6-85



8- The design of the trash is bad and unsuitable, and they are poorly distributed in the space. We notice the good design of the pavement in the space, in addition to its good condition. The separation between the grass and the pavement is bad, and this appears in the existence of soil in the pathways.

Figure 6-86



9- The basketball court is the most attractive element in the space for users. It is not shaded and has a concrete floor, but is in a bad condition. The separation between the basketball court and the grass allows the soil to reach the floor of the basketball court.

Figure 6-87



10- The sitting areas are well-shaded by palm trees most of the daytime. The design of sitting areas does not allow for social interaction, and it is also uncomfortable. There is a good sense of containment due to the area of the space, the height of overlooking buildings, and the presence of vertical green elements.

Figure 6-88



11- The area of the children's playground is not very attractive to users, and does not play a role in enhancing social interaction between users, because it is not shaded and not safe, despite the variety of games and their good condition.

Figure 6-89



12- The basketball court is located at a low level from the street level and the space level, resulting in the formation of a pool of water (rain and irrigation water) on its ground, which explains its poor condition. The absence of the green element in the outer edges of the space leads to the absence of a sense of containment within the space.

6.5.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Basateen plaza

- 1- Despite the existence of three spaces around the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz, two of them are isolated from the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz, because of King Fahd Road (this road has high density and speed of cars), which is very difficult to cross due to the lack of pedestrian crossings, which means separating the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz actually from these two spaces, and the absence of the benefit from their presence.

For the second space, it is 1200 meters away (20 minutes' walk "on foot") from the space of Umar bin Abdul-Aziz, in addition to fact that the path that connects the two spaces is not ready to link them functionally or aesthetically. Therefore, it is necessary to link these spaces by an open space system to get the social benefit from these spaces.

- 2- The design of the space is not good because it distributes activities and elements in an un thoughtful way, which led to the lack of their maximum use in activating the social interaction.
- 3- The area of children's playground is not actually used because of its lack of shading and its insecure location. The basketball court has a good number of users before sunset and at night time due to good night lighting.
- 4- The grass (in a good condition) covers half of the area of the space, as it helps to attract the users to the space. The presence of good number of palm trees in the space helps to shade some areas in the space at daytime.
- 5- The space is not isolated from the overlooking buildings due to the low speed and density of cars in the surrounding streets, in addition to the existence of a building adjacent to the space on the southern side, despite the absence of entrances from the building to the space.
- 6- The residents of nearby buildings are Saudis, and very well-off economically, but the presence of the basketball court has contributed significantly to attracting users from other categories and nationalities to the space.
- 7 - The absence of commercial activity in or around the space negatively affects the number and diversity of the users of the space, but it has given a special character to the space.

6.6 The historical area of Jeddah (Al-Balad)

The city of Jeddah has occupied an important position through different civilizations, which date back to the pre-Islamic era. This resulted in the approval of the World Heritage Committee of UNESCO⁵⁵ to adopt the historical area of Jeddah within the World Heritage List in 2014.

In 647, Jeddah became the port of Mecca city, which made it one of the most important cities on the coast of the Red Sea, and the gate of the Two Holy Mosques⁵⁶(Figure 6-90).

Due to the oil boom, many Jeddawis⁵⁷ moved north, away from Al-Balad, as it reminded them of less prosperous times. Poor immigrants moved in place of the Saudi population. The municipality of Jeddah began the historical preservation efforts in the 1970s.

In order to preserve the old structures within the Balad, the Historical Area Preservation Department was established in 1990, hoping also to help promoting cultural tourism in the country. Around that year, the Jeddah Urban Development Company was formed to restore Al-Balad.

In 1991, the Municipality of Jeddah founded the Jeddah Historical Preservation Society to preserve the historical architecture and culture of Al-Balad. In 2002, \$4 million dollars were earmarked for the preservation society.

The concept of "urban heritage"

The General Authority for Tourism and Antiquities (in Saudi Arabia) stated in one of the publications that the urban heritage that currently exists in the Saudi Arabia "gives us a comprehensive image of traditional architecture. In every sense, good solutions reflect the local environmental conditions (climatic, geographic, and social) that prevailed, as well as the design solutions they contain which are consistent with the needs of the man and his community, in terms of customs and traditions."

Overall objectives of growth and development

The new master plan of the Jeddah historical area has been drafted to achieve a set of integrated objectives, the most important of them are:

- Preserve the architectural and urban heritage represented in the urban fabric of the area and its content of historic buildings, paths, and open spaces (Figure 6-91).
- Develop the historical area of Jeddah in order to achieve its prosperity in the light of developments in the surrounding urban areas.

⁵⁵ UNESCO: The United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization.

⁵⁶ Two Holy Mosques in Mecca and Al Madinah cities

⁵⁷ Jeddawis is name to call the original residents of Jeddah.

Figure 6-90



In 647, Jeddah became the port of Mecca city, which made it one of the most important cities on the coast of the Red Sea,

Figure 6-91



Preserving the architectural and urban heritage represented in the urban fabric of the area and its content of historic buildings, paths, and open spaces.

The Historical Jeddah Festival

What is the Historical Jeddah Festival?

The Historical Jeddah Festival is considered the first festival of its kind in the city of Jeddah that recalls the past of both the place and the people, in a period of time through which the Bride of the Red Sea, (Jeddah city) had passed over more than half a century ago.

Government participation in the festival

The idea of establishing the historical Jeddah Festival was the idea of Prince Sultan bin Salman (Figure 6-92), head of the Tourism and National Heritage Commission, in order to support the adoption of the historical area of Jeddah within the UNESCO World Heritage List, then the festival became the biggest event administered by Jeddah Municipality.

On Saturday, June 21, 2014, his Royal Highness Prince Sultan bin Salman bin Abdul-Aziz, President of SCTA, announced the inclusion of "historical Jeddah" in the "World Heritage List" of UNESCO. This was verily the fruit of the great efforts made by SCTA in cooperation with the Mecca Province and the Jeddah Municipality throughout many years for the development and advancement of the historical area. The efforts were made within the framework of an integrated project for the rehabilitation of historical Jeddah as a national heritage site.

The Historical Jeddah Festival is one of the most important festivals in the city of Jeddah and the second most important festival in Saudi after Janadriya Festival⁵⁸. In addition, the festival is the first in the Kingdom in terms of the density of the number of visitors and patrons as the number of visitors until the end of the second version of has reached 3.8 million visitors. The festival was launched in 2014 in the historical area of Jeddah in the course of events.

The aim of the festival

The festival aims to promote the Kingdom as the House of culture, literature, and Arabian and Islamic history, while preserving the heritage and the cultural treasures. It links the glorious past of the Kingdom with its prosperous present, allowing the people of Jeddah in addition to its visitors to touch the episodes of last century. It also introduces the new generations to the heritage, culture, traditions, and history of the residents of the historical area of Jeddah. Moreover, the festival aims to revive the customs and traditions of Jeddah people, in addition to strengthening the social relations among visitors.

Festival events

The festival features various events each year (Figure 6-93), including dozens of programs and activities, in addition to forums and shows aimed at recalling the social atmospheres of the historical area of Jeddah as they were in the past (Figure 6-94).

Historical Jeddah Festival includes two events: Ramadanna Keda and Eidana Keda. Ramadanna Keda (Figure 6-95) lasts for 10 days in Ramadan. Eiddana Keda events take place during the first four days of the Eid al-Fitr (the most important feast for Muslims). Those events aim to revive the nights of local feast which were based on the joy and the interrelationship among the visitors.

The Historical Jeddah Festival takes on a new identity for 2019 - 2020:

Jeddah Governor, Prince Mishaal bin Majed, chaired a meeting of the Supreme Committee for the Historical Festival with representatives from the civil government and from the private sector at his office in Jeddah.

⁵⁸ Al-Jenadriyah is a cultural and heritage festival started in 1985 held in Jenadriyah near Riyadh in Saudi Arabia each year, lasting for two weeks.

The historical festival promises a host of cultural, historical, literary, and entertainment events, namely cultural lectures, museums, cultural and literary competitions.

Prince Mishaal has given a new identity and a new theme to the event called “Bright Sun” for its depiction of the lives of the people of the region from the past until the present through plays and exhibitions.

In addition to books and a presentation showcasing the life and history of the region with the entry of pilgrims over the centuries, there will also be still photographs of old industries, old houses, and traditional decorations, as well as calligraphy exhibitions.

The prince stressed on the new identity saying that the festival indicates a return of people’s interest in the region. He said that it would add great value to the region and its people, and the concept of the “Bright Sun “would apply to every part of the festival.

He noted that the festival achieved great success and stressed the importance of teamwork between all the participating sectors in order to ensure the success of the festival.

Prince Mishaal supervised all the areas of the festival and checked the reports submitted by the parties and sub-committees for the final preparations.

The prince is taking a personal interest in the final arrangements before the festival launch, and he sent a welcome message to festival visitors.

Figure 6-92



The idea to establish the historical Jeddah Festival was the idea of Prince Sultan bin Salman.

Figure 6-93



The festival features various events each year, including dozens of programs and activities.

Figure 6-94



Forums and shows aimed at recalling the social atmospheres of the historical area of Jeddah as they were in the past.

Figure 6-95



The Historical Jeddah Festival includes two events: Ramadanna Keda and Eidana Keda.

6.6.1 Al Balad plaza

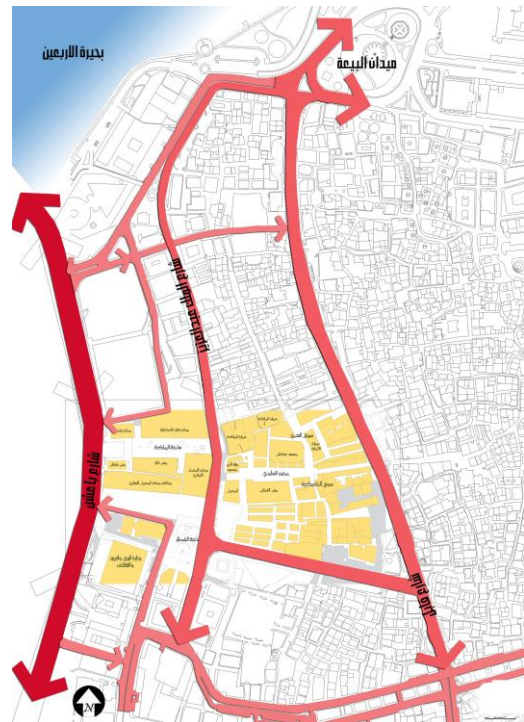
Figure 6-96



Service area map: The space is located in the center of Al-Balad neighborhood, which is a busy area dominated by commercial and residential people, which gives no room for other public spaces or an open space system. This means that the inhabitants of the surrounding areas have no gardens, parks, or public plazas for entertainment, relaxation, or social interaction, which means that this space is the only vent for neighbors (all categories of society: men, women, children, and the elderly).

The surrounding area has a very high population density; however, the municipality of Jeddah City did not take any urban measures that might help to save the neighborhood.

Figure 6-97



Movement and accessibility: The space is surrounded by a network of roads with high density and different speeds. However, access to the space is very difficult due to overcrowdedness, in addition to the rare parking spaces. Baashen street is located in the west of the space, a main road linking the north of the neighborhood to its south, with a maximum speed of 80 km per hour. Gabel street is located in the eastern part of space, and it also connects the north and south of the neighborhood. There are also two streets located in the northern and southern parts of the space connecting Baashen street and Gabel street. King Abdul-Aziz Street passes through the space from north to south, but its speed decreases when it reaches the space, reaching 20 kilometers per hour.

Figure 6-98 Building heights



Building heights: We note the height of the buildings overlooking the space, ranging from 20 floors to two floors, which provided a good amount of shadow in the space, gave a sense of containment, and helped air currents to pass, giving a sense of comfort in space, especially in summer.

Figure 6-99 Land use



Land use: Commercial use prevails over the use of the overlooking buildings. There are two residential buildings, which means that most users are merchants and from outside the area.

Figure 6-100 Blocks and Space



Blocks and Space: The building blocks prevail the space, while the space consists of narrow corridors (commercial axes) between the blocks of buildings, with some squares (the Train Square, and the Queen Square), and an wide commercial axis (Al Alawi Axis).

Figure 6-101 Building condition



Building condition: Most of the buildings are old buildings over 50 years old, with some medium-old buildings (30 years old), while there are some new buildings (Al-Mahmal Commercial Center, Salhia Commercial Building, and Sharbatli Commercial Building).

Figure 6-102 Wind movement



Wind movement: The heights of the buildings and the narrowness of commercial corridors have led to the formation of good air corridors, with the formation of areas of air whirling throughout the year, and at all the times of the day, but they become less during the day.

Figure 6-103



The shadows are created in the space due to the height of the buildings in April.

Figure 6-104



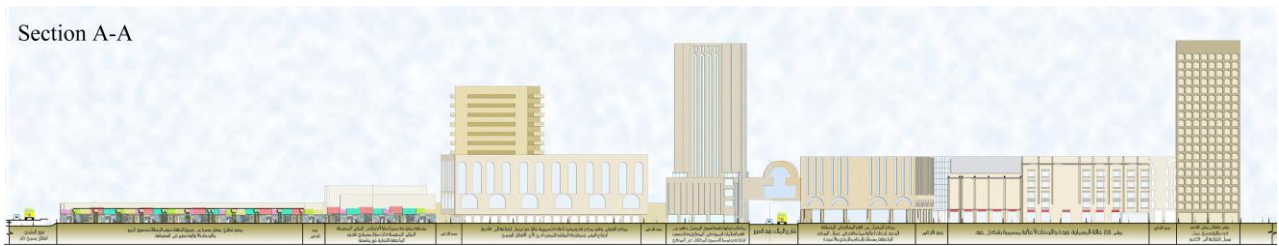
The shadows are created in the space due to the height of buildings in August.

Figure 6-105



The shadows are created in the space due to the height of buildings in December.

Figure 6-106



We notice the large disparity in the height of buildings, where there are three levels of height (high buildings, medium-height buildings, short buildings).

Figure 6-107



A map showing the locations of buildings height sections

Figure 6-108



The space is a mix of high buildings, medium-height buildings, and short buildings, so that we cannot find areas only for high buildings, or areas only for short buildings.

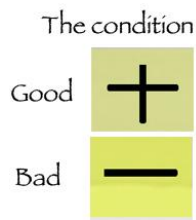
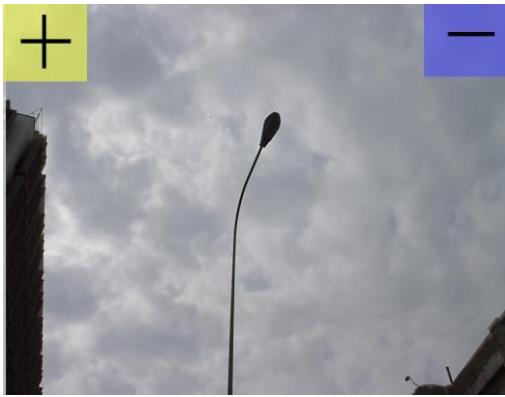


Figure 6-109



1- Lighting of the streets: This design of the lighting elements is spread throughout the streets of Jeddah city, but it is not related to the history, nature, and the space. The lighting elements are in a good condition, which helps to illuminate the space well in the night.

Figure 6-111



3- There are water elements in the design. They have good colors, and are made of granite. Their condition is good, which has helped to attract users to the space, and has become a gathering point for them.

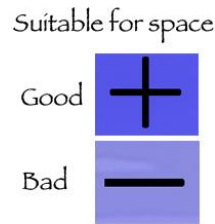


Figure 6-110



2- We notice the poor design of the shading elements, the inappropriate colors, as well as the inconsistencies with nearby buildings. These elements are in a bad condition and must be changed because they are dangerous to users.

Figure 6-112



4- The pavement pattern is suitable for the design of the space, in addition to its color and materials, but it is in a bad condition in some areas of the space, and needs to be maintained or changed.

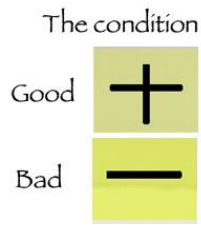


Figure 6-113

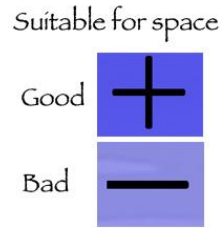


Figure 6-114



5- The barriers between the street and the space are good, new, and clean, but they do not suit the nature or design of the space, in addition to their bad design.

Figure 6-115



7- The sitting areas are made of granite. They are comfortable and have good colors, and their good design stimulates social interaction.

6- Sign Boards: They are widespread in all the parts of Jeddah city, but they do not fit the history or the design of the space. Their condition is good, and they are new.

Figure 6-116



8- The chairs design is not good. They are uncomfortable, and their colors are inconsistent with the space, as they are not suited to the nature of the space, but they are in a good condition.

Figure 6-117



A map showing the elements of the space and their distribution in the space.

Figure 6-118



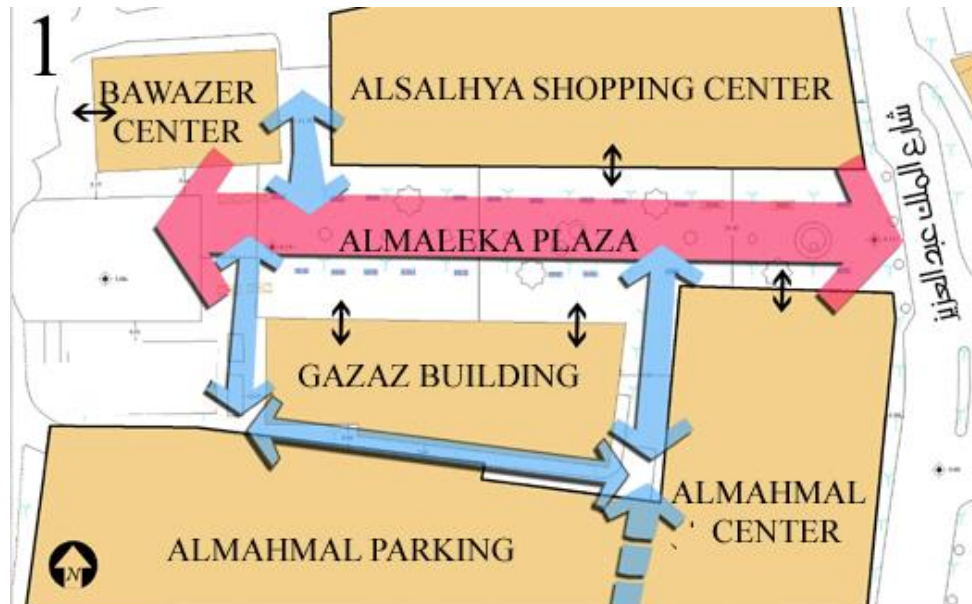
The space was divided into four parts, in order to facilitate its study and to analyze the behavior and type of space users. The area and shape of each part has been determined by its nature.

6.6.1.1 Social studies

This part was socially studied independently from the public spaces in the northern part of Jeddah city (the modern area), due to its different nature, design, and space area. The second reason is the difference in the type of users, their reasons for coming to the space, their number, and their behavior in the space.

Al Maleka plaza:

Figure 6-119



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 132 users, distributed as follows: 4 elderly people, one of them is non-Saudi, 82 men (30-50 years old), 33 of them are Saudis, and 12 children (7-13 years old), all of them are Saudis. In addition, there are 30 women (30-50 years), two Saudi young women (20-30 years), and a Saudi young man (20 years).

2- During the week **8 March** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 112 users, distributed as follows: 5 elderly people, two of them are Saudis, 72 men (30-50 years), 42 of them are Saudis, and 20 children (7-13 years old), 3 of them are non-Saudis. There are also four women (30-50 years), one of them is non-Saudi, and 11 young man (20-30 years old), 7 of them are non-Saudis.

3- Weekend **13 May** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 203 users, distributed as follows: 9 elderly, 7 of them are Saudis, 52 men (30-50 years), 23 of them are non-Saudis, and 23 children (7-13 years), 12 of them are Saudis. There are

43 women (30-50), 27 of them are Saudis, 67 young men (14-30 years), 32 of them are non-Saudis, and 32 young women (14-30 years), all of them are Saudis.

4- During the week **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 187 users, distributed as follows: 13 elderly people, 3 of them are non-Saudis, 83 men (30-50 years), 32 of them are Saudis, and 22 children (7-13 years), 17 of them are Saudis. There are 37 women (30-50), 12 of them are non-Saudis, 20 young men (14-30 years), 8 of them are Saudis, and 12 young women (14-30 years), 10 of them are Saudis.

5- Weekend **23 September** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 163 users, distributed as follows: 10 elderly people, 4 of them are non-Saudis, 91 men (30-50 years), 53 of them are Saudis, and 13 children (7-13 years), all of them are Saudis. There are 13 women (30-50), 5 of them are non-Saudis, 36 young men (14-30 years), 12 of them are non-Saudis, and 3 young women (14-30 years), all of them are Saudis.

6- During the week **6 November** from 4-5 pm:

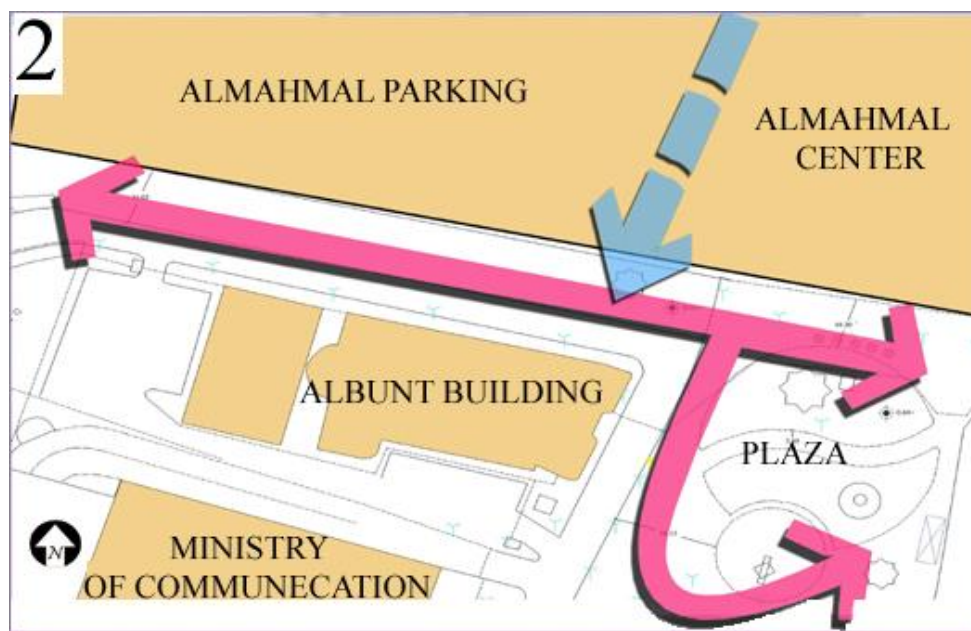
The space is used by 121 users, distributed as follows: 15 elderly, 12 of them are Saudis, 77 men (30-50 years), 15 of them are non-Saudis, and 12 children (7-13 years), 5 of them are non-Saudis. There are 10 women (30-50), all of them are Saudis, 4 young men (14-30 years), all of them are non-Saudis, and 3 young women (14-30 years), one of them is non-Saudi.

The analysis of the social study of Al Maleka plaza

- 1- Users use the Al Maleka plaza as a commercial axis to cross from and into the shops.
- 2- There is a good number of users sitting on the seats, most of them to talk, and the other part to meditate.
- 3- Children are present in the space most of the time, where they play football or play around the water elements.
- 4- A small number of users use the space to cross to King Abdul-Aziz Street.
- 5- Points of attraction in the space include the shops, street vendors, water elements, the seats, and King Abdul-Aziz Street.
- 6- There is good social interaction among users through the interaction of visitors and owners of shops or street vendors, the interaction of users of seats, and the interaction of children during play.

The Train plaza

Figure 6-120



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 213 users, distributed as follows: 23 elderly people, 7 of them are Saudis, 121 men (30-50 years old), 42 of them are non-Saudis, and 27 children (7-13 years old), 3 of them are non-Saudis. In addition, there are 21 women (30-50 years), 12 of them are Saudis, 10 young women (20-30 years), one of them is non-Saudi, and 11 young men (20 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis.

2- During the week **8 March** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 98 users, distributed as follows: 6 elderly people, one of them is non-Saudi, 57 men (30-50 years), 33 of them are Saudis, and 14 children (7-13 years old), 4 of them are non-Saudis. There are also 7 women (30-50 years), two of them are non-Saudi, a non-Saudi young woman (20-30 years), and 13 young men (20-30 years old), 7 of them are Saudis.

3- Weekend **13 May** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 223 users, distributed as follows: 13 elderly people, 4 of them are non-Saudis, 97 men (30-50 years), 45 of them are Saudis, and 34 children (7-13 years), 18 of them are Saudis. There are 39 women (30-50), 31 of them are Saudis, 23 young men (14-30 years), 12 of them are Saudis, and 17 young women (14-30 years), 4 of them are non-Saudis.

4- During the week **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 83 users, distributed as follows: 17 elderly, 9 of them are Saudis, 42 men (30-50 years), 19 of them are non-Saudis, and 7 children (7-13 years), one of them is non-Saudi. There

are 5 women (30-50), all of them are Saudis, 4 young man (14-30 years), 3 of them are Saudis, and 8 young women (14-30 years), one of them is non-Saudi.

5- Weekend **23 September** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 217 users, distributed as follows: 21 elderly people, 7 of them are non-Saudis, 74 men (30-50 years), 23 of them are non-Saudis, and 43 children (7-13 years), 19 of them are non-Saudis. There are 34 women (30-50), 7 of them are non-Saudis, 27 young men (14-30 years), 12 of them are Saudis, and 18 young women (14-30 years), 4 of them are Saudis.

6- During the week **6 November** from 4-5 pm:

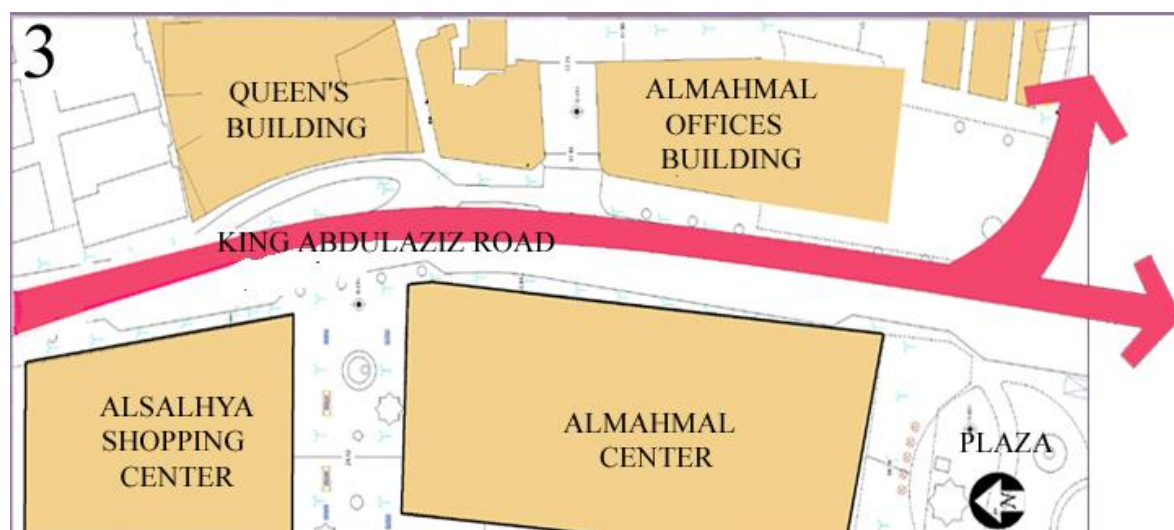
The space is used by 67 users, distributed as follows: 3 elderly people, one of them is non-Saudi, 50 men (30-50 years), 14 of them are Saudis, and 2 children (7-13 years), all of them are non-Saudis. There are 12 young men (14-30 years), 4 of them are Saudis

The analysis of the social study of the Train Plaza

- 1- The Train plaza is the least part that contains commercial activities, somewhat because of the distance from the commercial axis.
- 2- The plaza contains different sitting area, which make it attract elderly people who want to talk, meditate, and relax.
- 3- The area attracts large number of users, because of the large area of the plaza, and the lack of elements that hinder movement or consideration, in addition to the fact that it accommodates many activities and events on holidays and also includes festivals.
- 4- Most of the children in the Train plaza are in the company of their relatives (under family supervision) because they are often visitors from outside the area.
- 5- A few users use the plaza to reach King Abdul-Aziz Street, Al Malekah plaza, or the Al Alawi axis.
- 6- Points of attraction in the Train plaza include sitting areas, bus station, public phones, activities, and events at the time of festivals.
- 7- The presence of public telephones has attracted a large number of non-Saudis to call their families and friends countries.
- 8- Social interaction is excellent among users through the interaction between users in the sitting areas, bus station, and public phones, in addition to the high social interaction in the days of festivals and holidays because of the activities and events that take place in the plaza.

King Abdul-Aziz Road

Figure 6-121



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 89 users, distributed as follows: 9 elderly people, 3 of them are non-Saudis, 44 men (30-50 years old), 20 of them are non-Saudis, and 3 children (7-13 years old), all of them are Saudis. In addition, there are 29 women (30 - 50 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis, in addition to 4 Saudi young man (20-30 years).

2- During the week **8 March** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 52 users, distributed as follows: 2 elderly people, all of them are Saudis, 39 men (30-50 years), 20 of them are Saudis, and 2 children (7-13 years old), all of them are non-Saudis. There are also 9 Saudis women (30-50 years).

3- Weekend **13 May** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 104 users, distributed as follows: 7 elderly people, all of them are Saudis, 51 men (30-50 years), 40 of them are Saudis, and 5 children (7-13 years), 2 of them are non-Saudis. There are 23 women (30-50), 5 of them are Saudis, 4 young men (14-30 years), 2 of them are Saudis, and 14 young women (14-30 years), 9 of them are non-Saudis.

4- During the week **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 73 users, distributed as follows: 9 elderly people, 3 of them are non-Saudis, 32 men (30-50 years), 11 of them are non-Saudis, and one Saudi child (7-13 years). There are 20 women (30-50), 12 of them are Saudis, 9 young men (14-30 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis, and 2 Saudi young women (14-30 years).

5- Weekend **23 September** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 113 users, distributed as follows: 22 elderly people, 9 of them are non-Saudis, 68 men (30-50 years), 35 of them are Saudis, and 3 children (7-13 years), all of them are Saudis. There are 17 women (30-50), all of them are Saudis, one Saudi young man (14-30 years), and 2 non-Saudi young women (14-30 years).

6- During the week **6 November** from 4-5 pm:

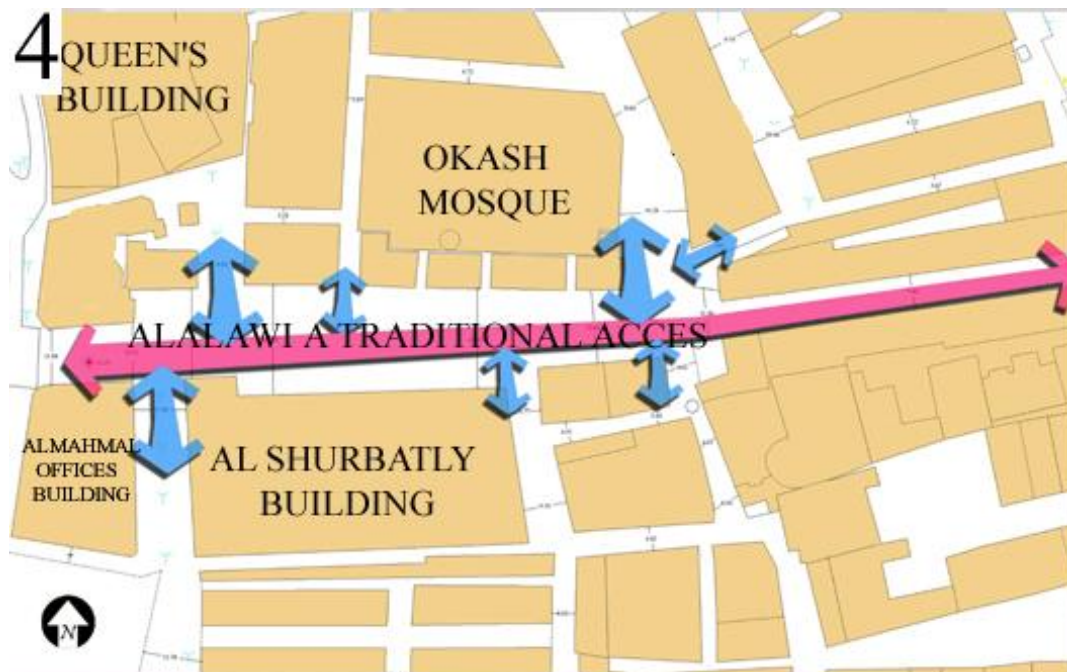
The space is used by 43 users, distributed as follows: 4 elderly people, one of them is non-Saudi, 19 men (30-50 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis, and 3 Saudi children (7-13 years). There are 10 women (30-50), all of them are Saudis, and 7 young men (14-30 years), 5 of them are Saudis.

The analysis of the social study of King Abdul-Aziz Road

- 1- King Abdul-Aziz Road is a commercial axis used for the movement of cars and the transition of users from and into the shops, or to their movement to the rest of parts in the space.
- 2- King Abdul-Aziz Road does not contain seats because it is narrow, so we find that this road is the least part of the space in involves social interaction among users.
- 3- The road contains noise and visual pollution, in addition to the pollution resulting from exhaust cars.
- 4- Children in the space are often accompanied by their relatives because of the dangers of the road (the passage of cars).
- 5- The space does not contain water elements or a space to play in, so we find that this part of the space is not attractive to children, especially independent children.
- 6- Points of attraction in King Abdul-Aziz Road include shops, restaurants, and taxis, as it is considered as an entrance for users to the space.
- 7- Social interaction in the road is acceptable through the interaction between users and traders, or users and drivers.

Al Alawi axis

Figure 6-122



1- Weekend **14 January** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 204 users, distributed as follows: 17 elderly people, 11 of them are Saudi, 101 men (30-50 years old), 73 of them are Saudis, and 15 children (7-13 years old), 11 of them are Saudis. In addition, there are 65 women (30 - 50 years) 22 of them are non-Saudis, and 6 Saudi young women (20-30 years).

2- During the week **8 March** from 4 to 5 pm:

The space is used by 88 users, distributed as follows: 5 elderly people, 3 of them are non-Saudis, 41 men (30-50 years), 7 of them are non-Saudis, and 7 children (7-13 years old) 2 of them are Saudis. There are also 35 women (30-50 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis.

3- Weekend **13 May** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 227 users, distributed as follows: 16 elderly people, 5 of them are non-Saudis, 104 men (30-50 years), 44 of them are non-Saudis, and 23 children (7-13 years), 9 of them are non-Saudis. There are 80 women (30-50), 52 of them are Saudis, and 4 young women (14-30 years), and they are all Saudis.

4- During the week **11 July** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 65 users, distributed as follows: 10 elderly people who are all Saudis, 32 men (30-50 years), 4 of them are non-Saudis, and 7 children (7-13 years), 3 of them are Saudis. There are 11 women (30-50), 5 of them are Saudis, 4 young men (14-30 years), all of them are non-Saudis, and 2 young women (14-30 years), one of them is Saudi.

5- Weekend **23 September** from 7-8 pm:

The space is used by 97 users, distributed as follows: 17 elderly people, 10 of them are Saudis, 57 men (30-50 years), 31 of them are non-Saudis, and 8 children (7-13 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis. There are 5 women (30-50), 3 of them are non-Saudis, 4 young men (14-30 years), 2 of them are non-Saudis, and 6 young women (14-30 years), all of them are Saudis.

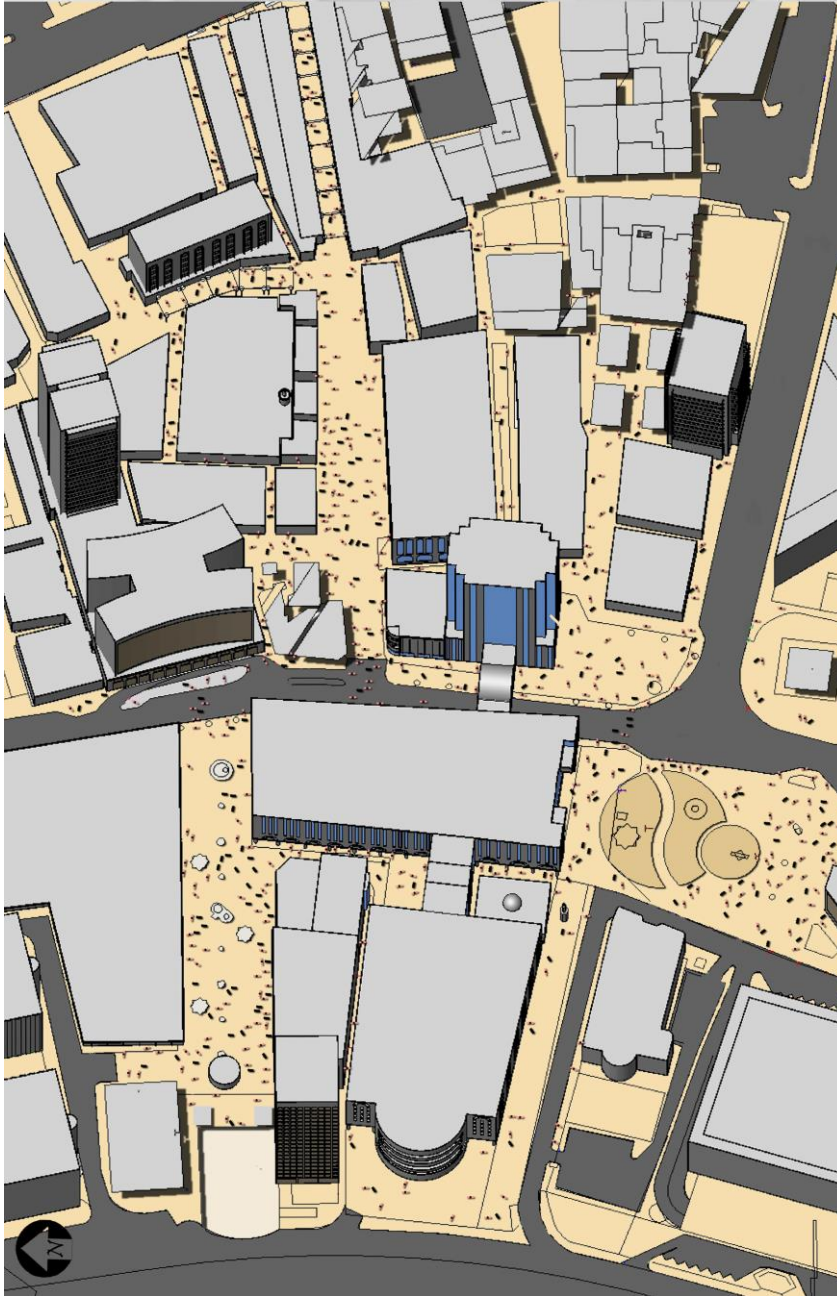
6- During the week **6 November** from 4-5 pm:

The space is used by 54 users, distributed as follows: 13 elderly, 7 of them are Saudis, 27 men (30-50 years), 10 of them are non-Saudis, and 9 children (7-13 years), 7 of them are Saudis. There are 5 young men (14-30 years), 3 of them are non-Saudis.

The analysis of the social study of The Al Alawi axis

- 1- Al Alawi axis is a very important commercial and historical axis in the city of Jeddah, and it contains the important commercial agencies of the largest merchants of the city of Jeddah, and so it has a historical and commercial character for users.
- 2- The axis has a large number of users as a result of the availability of all their needs at a good price, and so the commercial purpose is the main attraction for users.
- 3- A few users use the space to move to King Abdul-Aziz Road, al Malekah plaza, and the Train plaza.
- 4- There is an acceptable number of sitting areas, and so we find a number of users (often elderly users) use the seats to talk or relax.
- 5- There is a good number of children in the axis, because there is a space to play, in addition to the presence of water elements where children meet around to play.
- 6- Points of attractions in the axis include large commercial agencies, sitting areas, and water elements.
- 7- The axis gives a good sense of containment, in addition to the wonderful atmosphere especially in the winter due to the shadow of buildings in the day, as well as the air current at day and night.
- 8- During vacations, and festivals, the axis is used for certain events and activities.
- 9- Social interaction in the axis is excellent through the interaction of users with shop owners or with the peddlers, the interaction of users in the sitting areas, the interaction of children during playing, and the interaction of children's relatives with each other.

Figure 6-123 The distribution pattern



The distribution pattern of users in the space at peak time (festivals, holidays, Ramadan, weekends, vacations) depends heavily on the commercial activity in the space. So, we find that the wholesale shops and Al-Mahmal Commercial Center are the most important points of attraction in the space. In addition, the Train plaza, and Al Malekah plaza are important areas in the space due to the presence of some activities and events in the holiday season and during the festivals. Moreover, we find that the users are distributed according to the presence of restaurants and juice and ice cream shops. Water elements and sitting areas are attraction elements in the space, and they form areas where people gather in the space.

Figure 6-124



1- Shaded areas are utilized as sitting areas by using the shadows of high surrounding buildings. These areas are used as a platform for social interaction in the afternoon.

Figure 6-126



3- We notice the presence of an air current, in addition to the shadow in the afternoon, because of the height of the buildings forming a comfortable space for use, and for social interaction. The water elements used by children for playing.

Figure 6-125



2- The underground path is used as a children playground because there are no playground areas in the region, in addition to the factors of shade and security (away from the movement of cars).

Figure 6-127



4- There are few users in some axes because of the lack of commercial activities, which gives an indication that commercial activity is the main generator of the movement in space.

Figure 6-128



5- We notice crowdedness in the area of buses because of the lack of sitting areas. This area contains a variety of ages, nationalities, and economic class.

Figure 6-129



6- The presence of public telephones leads to the presence of a big number of non-Saudis in the area. The existence of street vendors in the space makes it a place for negotiations between commercial sellers and buyers.

Figure 6-130



8- Although some areas are free of sitting areas, social interaction is still present among users who exploit the shadows resulting from the high buildings to have a good space for social interaction in daylight hours.

Figure 6-131



7- Preserving the ancient architectural elements gives the historical spirit which attracts visitors to the area. The density and speed of cars are not high, making the movement of users among the parts of space easy.

Figure 6-132



9- The variety of use in the commercial path leads to more social interactions. The prices of all goods are the cheapest, in addition to the existence of some old and rare goods.

Figure 6-134



11- Most of the movement in the area is toward the street vendors. There are many independent children in the water elements area, which they use to play.

Figure 6-133



10- We notice women's presence in the some axes more than the rest of the area as a result the type of commercial activities.

Figure 6-135



12- What is noticeable is the increase in number of visitors after 5 pm because of the weather. There are large numbers of non-Saudis, usually in groups.

6.6.1.2 The Role of Design in Social Interaction in Al Balad Plaza

- 1- The area surrounding the space has no public spaces or open space system, but there are some traditional paths that sometimes work as public spaces, and this drives the population of the surrounding area to come to the space, especially with easy access to them from these areas.
- 2- Access by car to the Al Balad space is very difficult, considering the high density of cars movement, the narrow streets near the space, and the many pedestrian crossing areas, in addition to the long time needed to access the space by car. As for the pedestrians, access to space is easy and fast because there is a network of well-designed corridors connecting all parts of the space to the surrounding areas, in addition to the pleasure of moving to the space on foot through the commercial axes.
- 3- The space design is an open space system in itself, where there is a graduation in the transition among spaces. In addition, the design offers a diversity of areas, designs, elements, and activities in each part of the space, giving pleasure in moving among these parts of the space.
- 4- The height of the buildings overlooking the space and the narrow corridors have led to the creation of a sense of containment in all the parts of the space, in addition to giving a special character to the space. Moreover, the different buildings heights have led to the enjoyment in the visual panorama of the user.
- 5- Commercial use dominates the uses of land surrounding the space, attracting a large number of users from outside and within the area at all times of the day, in addition to government buildings which are attractive for users during the daytime.
- 6- The ratio of the architectural blocks to the space in the Al Balad is good, which gives a good open spaces system, different areas, shapes, and characters, where the corridors and small spaces that penetrate the architectural blocks have led to reducing the feeling of the size of the big blocks.
- 7- The surrounding buildings are in good condition, which have contributed to attracting people to the space, in addition the existence of old buildings that give a historical personality to the space. The different age of buildings overlooking the space have led to diversifying the view of users, so that there are old buildings of more than 50 years, medium-old buildings, and modern buildings with a new and modern design.
- 8- There is a clear difference in the atmosphere between the Al Balad plaza and the rest of the other public spaces in modern areas in Jeddah in terms of temperature, air movement, and the amount of shadows. The user feels comfortable during the transition among parts of Al Balad

plaza, thanks to the design derived from the urban heritage of Jeddah city which fits the climatic and geographical aspects of the city.

- 9- The basic elements that exist in the space (lighting, umbrellas, fountains, pavement, signs, barriers, and sitting areas) support the space design and provide all elements of comfort to users, thus attracting them to use the space.

These elements are thoughtfully and evenly distributed in all parts of the space so that we find that all parts contain almost all elements, but there are some exceptions such as King Abdul-Aziz Road is free of certain elements (sitting areas for example) but for design reasons.

Most of the elements fit the space, but there are some elements that are not suitable for the design or the character of the area as a whole or where it is located; for example, the shading elements in Al Alawi axis do not fit the place where they exist and are not suitable for the whole area, in addition to posing a danger to users.

Most elements have a good condition and an acceptable shape, and they function properly. They are also attractive to users, such as the water elements next to the Al Mahmal Commercial Center which is a point of gathering for users, and it is a landmark in the space.

Good night lighting has significantly helped to the use of the space during the night, holidays, and festivals, thus providing a good environment for social interaction.

Despite the bad condition of the shading elements, they are creating shaded areas which help to attract users to the space during the daytime.

The presence of seats has contributed in the formation of a platform to support and promote social interaction in the space, especially for the elderly people. Water elements are also areas of gathering and a landmark in the space, as the children use them to meet and play. They are also used by non-Saudis as sitting areas to increase social interaction.

6.7 Summary

This chapter has investigated the usage patterns of open space to investigate when, why, and how people use designed open spaces for their social interaction in these open spaces in the context of Jeddah, because this has not been adequately studied in previous studies. The obstacles related to usage patterns are also evaluated within an urban context that includes the factors of climate, cultural, religious, social, and gender. The following chapter discusses the study findings by connecting the results to theory through evaluating the data collected and linking these results to the theories discussed in the literature review.

CHAPTER SEVEN

DISCUSSION OF RESEARCH CONCLUSIONS

CHAPTER SEVEN

DISCUSSION OF RESEARCH CONCLUSIONS

7.1 Introduction

This chapter presents relevant conclusions and findings based on the previous three chapters and discusses the obtained results as they pertain to relevant theories discussed in the literature review. The discussion presented as part of this chapter also proposes solutions for application of appropriate theories to the case of the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia. In fact, Jeddah City constitutes a rich topic which should be tackled in specific case studies. The importance of Jeddah lies in it being a tourist city which the majority of pilgrims decide to visit for recreational purposes after completing their pilgrimage due to its proximity to Makkah and Madinah. Moreover, the population of Jeddah is more diverse compared to adjacent cities since it experiences a higher influx of immigrants from several countries.

The present chapter is categorized into three segments according to research objectives discussed in the first chapter. The first section includes discussion of the differences in the methods of utilizing public open spaces in Jeddah with regard to temporality, specialty, and identity. This section elucidates cultural standards and geographical standards which significantly differ from their counterparts in the contexts of the USA and Europe. Currently, there are numerous pertinent research studies evaluating this topic in the context of Europe and North America. This chapter section also reveals the common purposes of visiting public open spaces in Jeddah, categorized into three classes: social well-being, mental well-being, and physical well-being. The explanation incorporated into these two sections is relevant to the first objective of this study: examination and analysis of residents' attitudes towards public spaces existing in the urban environment of Saudi Arabia. The second objective of the present study is evaluation of the importance of social life and attitudes in forming and fostering of the values and significance of public open space. This objective is explained in the second section of this chapter which discusses social interactions. This model is a tool frequently used to examine the value of social life and social interaction. Subsequently, the third section of the chapter explains the structure and maintenance features of public open spaces and reveals views expressed by users of Jeddah's public spaces and the users' anticipations regarding them. Also, the section discusses the opinions of professionals and officials on these topics, which were gathered by interviewing. The third section of the chapter is relevant to the third objective of the study: determine some of the implications for improved planning and design of public open spaces in line with governmental plans and actors in decision-making to meet the requirements of users within the context of Jeddah city, thus contribute to bring back the social life to those spaces.

7.2 The Utilization of Public Open Spaces with Regard to Temporal, Spatial, and Identity

Features

The literature review regarding public open spaces predominantly includes studies carried out in Western and European countries, where recreational areas and utilization of public open spaces have been extensively examined and recorded. The main conclusion of this section is that Jeddah embraces unique designs, features, and models of public open spaces which differ significantly from those in other cities. The objective of this section is documenting the forms of utilization of public open spaces in Jeddah and the differences between these patterns and their counterparts prevailing in the cities of the West. Specifically, this includes an evaluation of public space use as it pertains to users' age, sex, and social features. Evaluating the use of public open spaces can provide indication of the residents' preferences.

7.2.1 Systematic Arrangement of Public Open Spaces

When comparing the arrangement systems adopted in non-Arab countries and those applied to public open spaces in Jeddah, the arrangement systems of non-Arab cities may not serve as an accurate point of reference in the context of Jeddah. The form and features of public open spaces developed in various countries are affected by the social features of each community, the cultural values of each community, religious principles, geography, and prevalent weather conditions. Moreover, these factors also impact human use and interpretation of these open spaces. Jeddah constitutes an important topic for a case study as its public spaces are associated with features resembling those of other countries with similar climate and geography. For the purpose of thoroughly explaining the idea of social interaction in Jeddah's open public spaces, which is the second research objective, as well as understanding the attitudes of their users, it is essential to present a clear discussion of the types of spaces habitually used by residents. Presently, there are different public open spaces utilized for various aims by the inhabitants of Jeddah. The categorization of public spaces in used this study differs from categorization used in other studies which categorize public open spaces according to the activities performed in these spaces, such as studies carried out by Llewellyn (1992) and Eckbo (1969). The discussion in section ((8.1.2)) presents the utilization of relevant sites, including circuitous routes.

7.2.2 Access to Public Open Spaces

Based on the analyses of Krenichyn (2006), Ferre et al. (2006), and Lloyd et al. (2008), establishing a large number of local parks along the pathways leading to residential blocks or houses generally helps to increase local park use. Contrarily, locating public parks in places which can be mainly

reached by cars is associated with limited use of these parks due to accessibility issues, including traffic congestion (Henderson et al., 2001; Griffin et al., 2008). In other words, users are typically more motivated to visit parks which are near their residential areas and which can be reached on foot within a short time. Based these findings, it appears there is a lack of public open spaces which are adjacent to neighborhoods. Other studies reveal that the creation of reachable public open spaces in residential areas and near schools is expected to promote the social life of inhabitants who can use these spaces for social recreation (Ferre et al., 2006). Interestingly, in Jeddah, the attitudes of residents demonstrate that some individuals are more interested in traveling to public spaces by car, as they consider car travel to be an integral element of the recreation experience. Accordingly, these features are contrary to the above-mentioned findings pertaining to European and North American cities.

Mobility

Our research findings demonstrate that the majority of participants who have come from Saudi Arabia and other countries are more interested in traveling to a specific public space by car more than walking on foot, even if the public space is near their residential blocks. The interest in traveling by car to public open spaces can be attributed to the convenience of bringing necessary sports equipment, such as nets or balls and saving time.

Moreover, participants regard the journey to the public space as an important element of their visit experience. Based on previous research, it has been demonstrated that individuals visiting public spaces prefer reaching these spaces by any other means of transportation than by walking (Price and Matthews, 2013). Regarding the attitudes towards access to public spaces in Jeddah, individuals regard the journey to public spaces as an interesting experience which promotes their sense of pleasure. This attitude is mainly displayed by young people and children who enjoy the landscapes along the way to the public space. However, some individuals prefer recreation in open spaces located near their residential areas that can be reached on foot. These participants regard walking as a simple physical exercise. In this regard, a respondent mentioned, "Reaching a public space using my car is a bad habit as walking is much healthier." Study results have also revealed that some individuals visit public spaces near their residential areas using cars due to the deficient features of the pavements in the city.

There are several factors responsible for wide-scale reliance on private cars in Jeddah. The main contributing factor is the poor quality of public transportation in Jeddah. Recently, the government of Saudi Arabia has decided to develop a public transportation improvement plan for several of its major cities. One of the main steps of this plan is the construction of wide roads in main cities, including Jeddah and Riyadh (Al-Sibai, 2013). Another factor responsible for the growing use of cars in Jeddah is its high temperatures and high humidity. Thus, it is more convenient for visitors of public spaces to

travel in their cars amid these hard weather conditions. Moreover, another reason for the growing use of cars for travel to public spaces is their geographical location.

There are several significant benefits and disadvantages associated with the wide-scale reliance on private cars in Jeddah. One of these benefits is being able to enjoy the beautiful landscapes when driving to public spaces, especially along roads which are effectively landscaped and gardened. However, one of the drawbacks associated with excessive reliance on cars compared to walking is physical inactivity and its associated health risks (Cooper et al., 2005). Also, the excessive reliance on cars aggravates the issue of traffic congestion and increases the risk and incidence of car accidents in Saudi Arabia. In 2012, the Saudi Arabia was ranked first with regard to the annual rates of fatalities caused by car accidents (Alriyadh, 2014).

Several studies highlight the association between excessive reliance on cars and other motor vehicles with increased environmental contamination (Woodcock et al., 2007; Smith et al., 2013). Due to increased demand for private cars, the city is currently struggling to meet the rising demand for parking spaces. Recent studies demonstrate there is insufficient number of parking lots compared to the numbers of cars used, especially in the Al-Balad area of Jeddah. Specifically, Al-Balad visitors are forced to use street parking due to the insufficient number of parking lots. In turn, increased use of street parking results in further traffic congestion and hinders visitors from reaching their destination.

Reaching Road Spaces and Incidental Areas

One of the main conclusions of the present research indicates that the existing physical arrangement of incidental roadside areas significantly differs from the arrangement of public recreational areas in the West.

In Jeddah, several public spaces such as main street corners, footpaths, and traffic circles are used by both Saudis and non-Saudis residing in the city. The reasons for using these spaces differ between individuals, and are outlined in discussions with the users. For example, some inhabitants said that they are interested in using footpaths as a means of recreation as opposed to visiting the gardens and parks in Jeddah, due to their poor quality. Some inhabitants might avoid using the Corniche Area due its untidiness and generally unkempt nature. Some inhabitants of Jeddah are interested in using informal or casual public spaces such as pathways for social congregations and recreation. In other words, some residents display attachment to places which were not originally designed for such activities. In accordance with the cultural values of Saudi Arabia, many Saudi families are interested in having privacy in public open spaces. However, most non-Saudis, including tourists, and non-Saudis perceive privacy as a trivial matter. Accordingly, the open spaces in the Corniche Area interests are predominantly used by tourists and non-Saudis rather than nationals.

Some people perceive traffic circles as a public place for congregations, which is not the original purpose of establishing these sites. Strangely enough, some individuals congregate in the traffic circles of crowded traffic ways, such as Al-Alayah traffic circle in the Corniche Area.

Therefore, an examination of factors leading to use of informal spaces such as footpaths for recreational purposes, is needed. This phenomenon can serve as an indication of the lack of sufficient number of suitable, satisfactory, pleasing recreational public spaces for users created by the municipality. In particular, the municipality has generally failed to implement optimal design features while planning recreational public spaces. Thus, the recreational demands of residents are usually not fulfilled. Also, some analysts have suggested that many residents are not interested in public spaces due to the absence of privacy considerations.

According to Bahammam (1995), conservative societies are in dire need of privacy to establish their presence in every space of their community. The necessary privacy can be achieved through implementing specific physical features and arrangement of every developed space. Based on Islamic principles, the idea of privacy is highly valued and essential, and can be fulfilled by the provision of well-defined spaces. However, this requirement of privacy is not embraced by all cultures and religions universally, as each community has its own specific values.

Saudi Arabia has witnessed the application of rigid standards with regard to privacy, which has also affected the accepted behavior of its citizens. Accordingly, Saudi families typically seek public spaces with high degrees of privacy. For example, families usually seek spaces in which there are private areas for females. Also, families are interested in using public spaces where youth and adults can form separate male and female teams to carry out recreational activities such as sports. Accordingly, the originally acquired values associated with religion, culture, and society have an impact on the way public open spaces are perceived and used. Notably, males in conservative societies are not subject to as many restrictions in using public open spaces compared to females, and can move through them freely without limitations and at any time.

7.2.3 Temporal Utilization of Public Spaces

Respondent answers have revealed that the frequency of using public open spaces relies on different factors, including climate, location of the public space, the available facilities, and personal reasons.

Moreover, the frequency of using public open spaces differs from holidays to official working days. Therefore, it is essential to examine daily life patterns in the Saudi community prior to explaining the temporal utilization of public open spaces in Jeddah. Most of the stores and shopping centers located in the Kingdom are closed at specific times throughout the day, as well as during times of prayer. There are slight differences in the closure times of these stores and shopping centers. The most

common closure time is associated in the afternoon period, associated with the afternoon prayer is 4.30 p.m. Therefore, Jeddah residents seldom use open spaces such as the Corniche Area or garden during the common closure times. Stores and shopping centers then re-open after the Isha prayer and operate until 12 a.m. Typically, individuals avoid using public spaces during the early morning due to the extremely hot weather conditions in Jeddah, especially in the summer.

According to the discussions with residents and examinations of public spaces, most individuals and families access the spaces upon the Asr prayer during the working week and stay there for different durations. Most individuals use the Rowa Plaza walk for limited durations, up to 30 minutes. Contrarily, families or groups using the same space usually stay for longer periods of time. This pattern has been evident in nearly all the sites examined. The Aqsan Plaza is an exceptional case. In this garden, females are permitted to visit the space for two hours, from 4.30 p.m. to 6.30 p.m., since the ineffectiveness of the existing lighting system of the space concerns their families at late times. However, this is not the case on weekends, official holidays, religious celebrations, and Ramadan. Some exceptional open spaces, such as Jeddah's Waterfront, are frequently visited at early times. But, most users are interested in visiting open spaces upon the Asr prayer to avoiding the sun⁵⁹. The most remarkable feature associated with the utilization of public spaces in Jeddah is that users are interested in staying there until late on weekends, official holidays (especially in the summer), and Ramadan. Study participants have revealed that on most working days, open spaces are used until 12 a.m. On weekends and in the summer, these spaces are usually utilized until 3 a.m. Some users stay in these spaces until sunrise during special festivals, such as Eid Al-Fitr.

In several countries, the utilization of public open spaces at late times is perceived as unsafe. In European countries, individuals typically do not prefer visiting parks and gardens at late times, preferring to relocate to indoor spaces at late times. In Jeddah, it is can be difficult to determine whether users of Jeddah's Waterfront in the early morning have arrived in the morning or had stayed there since the evening. In fact, users' the duration of stay in a public space and willingness to stay at late times there are also dependent on the availability of safety elements, such as presence of security personnel and effective lighting.

7.2.4 The Perception of Landscape

Jeddah is located by the sea and embraces a variety of attractive public open spaces. However, it can be additionally described as a desert city due to its geographical location. Jeddah is associated with the presence of three types of landscapes: green public open spaces, seafront destinations, and desert locations. The conclusions of the present research reveal different opinions and perceptions in connection with specific types of landscape, illustrating respondents' differing views. Some individuals regard specific green public spaces as attractive environments for enjoying their leisure.

⁵⁹ In the summer, the heat from the sun persists until 5:30 p.m., while in the winter, it continues until 4:45 p.m.

Contrarily, other individuals are more interested in destinations with desert features as they are quieter and farther away from the city center (Coles and Bussey, 2000). However, most participants mentioned they prefer public open spaces which need to be reached by car.

Examination of conclusions demonstrates that many Saudi residents are interested in desert features of open spaces, as they reflect the typical landscapes of their home country, their conventions, traditions, and values in connection with their culture and society. Several previous studies have focused on evaluating the attractiveness of the desert and the connection between Saudi residents and the desert landscape. This topic was examined by Lemerick et al. (1992) and Alturki (2001) in America. However, most Saudi participants and foreign participants interviewed at the case study locations in Jeddah have stated they enjoy using modern open spaces and seaside destinations. This demonstrates that residents' interest in these spaces arises due to their proximity to their residential areas and their accessibility, strengthening the attachment of residents to these spaces due to their positive experiences there. The majority of Saudis and non-Saudis are interested in visiting spaces which embrace a variety of green areas or landscapes in order to enjoy nature. Also, many residents love to visit spaces which contain well-developed and well-paved footpaths. Specifically, Saudi residents of Syrian and Lebanese origin are interested in visiting green open spaces and areas which allow them to take part in recreational activities.

Some non-Saudis and nationals who use public open spaces also disclosed their opinions on the public open spaces of Jeddah, suggesting that the Jeddah Municipality should develop and preserve the city's landscapes in the same manner as in the West, including specific features and arrangement. Participants have also expressed their interest in being near nature or in any natural elements of the open spaces. For example, the Aqsan Plaza which exists in Jeddah's urban environment is not a natural destination; however, visitors are interested in visiting it to see the plants and enjoy the morning sunshine. Moreover, some users prefer visiting the Aqsan Plaza for walking or jogging. In fact, the meaning of "nature" is perceived differently among participants. For example, from the point of view of some respondents, the fresh air in the city's open spaces constitutes an important element of nature. Meanwhile, other participants perceive green areas, rocks, trees, and palm trees as attractive elements of nature which they need to see in public open spaces. In addition, other participants perceived the desert as a major element of nature. Due to their fondness of the desert, some of the participants have reported using elements of the desert in their homes, such as by installing small tents in their private gardens and decorating their gardens with rocks and desert plants. Some of the respondents reported perceiving destinations near the sea as beautiful natural place, and chose to live near the coastline. Therefore, participants' differing perceptions of what constitutes "nature" reflect differing interests in specific elements of nature.

7.2.5 Forms of Well-Being

The First Form: Mental Well-Being

Study participants have expressed various opinions on public open spaces with regard to their preferred locations and features. Conclusions of the present research correlate with findings of previous studies in that the reliance on esthetically pleasing natural elements can motivate residents to visit public spaces frequently (Guita et al., 2006; Hansmann et al., 2007; Cattell et al., 2008; Nordh et al., 2009; and Thompson et al., 2011).

These conclusions reflect the fact that public open spaces in Jeddah are utilized daily for recreational activities. One of the participants, an Egyptian female non-Saudi resident, said that she uses the Omar bin Abdul Aziz Plaza in order to escape from the daily routine and stress in order to meditate and achieve “peace of mind.” A Saudi female resident mentioned that she visits the plaza area in order to “recharge her batteries” so that she can be productive and energetic at work.

Based on the restoration theory, individuals who undergo extreme tiredness due to excessive daily stress perceive using open spaces as an escape from urban life. Based on the analysis of Kaplan (1995), individuals do not necessarily need to visit rural areas in order to achieve “restoration,” as urban environment can include natural constituents which help to achieve the restoration process (Kaplan, 1995). Visitors of open spaces in Jeddah rely on various ways to alleviate daily stress. In this regard, Saudi and foreign respondents have mentioned that routine and daily stress are the main issues they need to escape. Individuals regard open spaces as areas for relaxation and recreation through their contact with natural elements and fresh air. One of the respondents has expressed that he enjoys being touched by the air and sunlight of open spaces. Some participants have expressed that public open spaces are perfect places to break away from the “concrete boxes”⁶⁰ they live in. According to Maller et al. (2005), contact with nature can occur in various locations.

In fact, users of public spaces have varying requirements for recreation. In general, most Saudi males perceive desert destinations as the best place to escape daily stress and routine. Participants who have expressed that the desert is an excellent destination for escaping from stress have explained that their interest in the desert environment is due to its distance from the city noise and crowds. Interestingly, most male non-Saudis perceive the seafront or the coastline existing in Jeddah as the ideal destination for escaping stress due to it being part of the urban environment and its close proximity near their residential areas, while being less noisy than the urban environment. Moreover, Saudi youth and female non-Saudis have stated they are interested in public open spaces and the

⁶⁰ Concrete boxes: This expression refers to the design of modern homes.

seaside surroundings for similar reasons. Female participants have expressed that the areas close to the sea allow them to let relax and feel free while enjoying the fresh air and watching natural elements. Such factors make seaside areas the perfect destination for recreation and relaxation. Also, adult Saudi male and female participants have expressed their interest in the seaside areas due to the presence of several historical destinations which they find interesting to visit. The majority of non-Saudi participants living in Jeddah and using public open spaces have expressed their interest in green open spaces and seaside areas.

Research observations demonstrate that the visitors of public open spaces display an interest in having visual interaction with the elements of these areas. Specifically, they report 'watching the green areas' and 'making physical contact with the plants and flowers for sensory engagement.' Additionally, most open space users report enjoying taking part in active recreation by walking, jogging, or playing sports. Many of them report feeling relaxed while being in open areas due to being exposed to fresh air and sunshine. Therefore, conclusions of the present study corresponds the conclusions of earlier studies with regard to the role of open spaces in alleviating stress (Grahm and Stigsdotter, 2003), reducing the occurrence of headaches (Hansmann et al., 2007), attaining better psychological health (Guite et al., 2006), improving one's lifestyle (Hussain et al., 2010), and achieving self-perceived health (Maas et al., 2009).

Several case study sites in Jeddah have permitted to examine the ideas of restoration and stress alleviation. Some respondents have expressed that the main reason for visiting public open spaces is their strong need for alleviating stress and restoring the traditional quality of life in a non-urban setting. These respondents prefer to enjoy the quiet and tranquility of the traditional lifestyle which includes little exposure to crowds and noise. Other participants have mentioned that there are other reasons which motivate them to visit open spaces, expressing that open spaces are beneficial for gathering with family members or friends, carrying out fitness activities, or playing sports. According to Bell et al. (2003), Coles and Bussey (2000), Hansmann, Hug, and Seeland (2007), the broad-scale interest in public open spaces is due to the need for escaping the urban environment.

The Second Form: Physical Well-Being

In Saudi Arabia, two of the governments' main concerns expressed in the recent years include the protection of residents' health and the establishment of well-being in Saudi society. In this regard, a wide-scale program was launched by the Ministry of Health for the purpose of reducing obesity⁶¹ among youth and adults. One of the recommendations of this program is regular exercise in the form of walking. As a result, more individuals have become interested in walking, and one of the most appropriate environments for this activity is public spaces where individuals can also enjoy the beautiful scenery. Importantly, large numbers of people can be seen walking or jogging in public open

⁶¹ The Obesity Control Program was introduced as per a resolution by the MOH Executive Council No. 68,201 dated 17/12/2013. It is one of the programs supervised by the Genetic and Chronic Diseases Control General.

spaces at different times of the day. According to the interviews and observations, walking or practicing any form of exercise has become an important source of motivation for using public open spaces in Jeddah. Several respondents have mentioned that they enjoy frequent walks in public spaces. Indeed, according to the study results, walking for the purpose of exercise has become a favorite activity of several Saudi residents who were interviewed. However, observations and interviews do not include the views of non-users of public spaces.

Recently, the Saudi government has raised residents' awareness of the importance of maintaining their physical, mental, and psychological health, resulting in reduced incidents of major illness. One of the challenges which the government has faced in emphasizing importance of walking in prevention of disease and maintaining good health is the extremely hot climate prevailing in different Saudi cities, including Jeddah. Jeddah is associated with high temperatures, especially in the summer, which can discourage residents from walking or jogging in public open spaces. The study participants have demonstrated their views of walking in open spaces and its perceived value in their lives. Some participants have explained that they interpret walking in public open spaces as a way of enjoying natural elements such as plants, sunshine, and the views of the sea (according to a Jordanian male participant, aged 46 years, as well as others). Other participants perceive walking in these spaces as a way of relaxing by breathing fresh air (according to a Lebanese female participant, aged 32 years, as well as others). Some participants perceive walking in these spaces as a way of becoming fit within a short time (according to a Saudi female participant, aged 25, as well as others). Moreover, certain participants also perceive walking in these spaces as a means of socializing and making friends (according to an Egyptian female participant aged 35 years, as well as others).

The conducted literature review reveals that physical well-being can be achieved by encouraging residents to walk in public spaces. According to the conclusions drawn, the ease of reaching open spaces and the existence of open spaces near residential neighborhoods can motivate individuals to take part in outdoor physical activities more frequently (Ellaway et al., 2005). The idea of exercising in open areas is perceived in a relatively different manner in Jeddah. For example, there are negative attitudes displayed by Saudi males towards the idea of females exercising in open spaces due to the belief that women should stay in indoor spaces to avoid mingling with male strangers. Many residents are interested in exercising in open spaces in light of their effective management and arrangement. Based on the discussions with participants, it appears that only a small number of Saudi females can go running in open spaces. However, the majority of Saudi females cannot run in open spaces due to the Saudi cultural values, which do not support the presence of women in mixed-sex places. Moreover, the majority of Saudi women are permitted to participate in physical activities in private female-only areas. Contrarily, American and European women do not face such restrictions and can participate in fitness activities in open spaces freely. The role of females in Saudi society has been supported by the government of the Kingdom only in the recent years. The majority of participants visiting the Al Aqsan Plaza can reach it easily due to its central location. Interestingly, the Al Aqsan

Plaza also contains special playing fields for children.

7.2.6 Religious Rituals in Public Open Spaces

Islam is the main religion in Saudi Arabia and accordingly, the Saudi culture encompasses several Islamic values which are applied by Saudis in daily life. According to Islamic rituals, true Muslim believers should pray five times daily at particular times which slightly differ from one destination to another within the Kingdom. Moreover, Muslims are prohibited from delaying their prayers. Thus, the owners of stores, shopping centers, and other public spaces in the Kingdom are forced to close their establishments during prayer times. Based on the discussions, interviews, and observations, the visitors of open public spaces prefer praying in these spaces even if there is no masjid nearby. Some of the participants have expressed that they prefer to pray in open areas as they perceive it as a more spiritual experience. Unfortunately, most public spaces in the Kingdom do not embrace special areas for praying. Moreover, most of the designers of these spaces have not taken into consideration the importance of developing special shaded areas for praying and availability of washroom facilities. Before praying, Muslims need to enter washrooms for performing ablution rituals. Based on the results of interviews, praying in public open spaces, especially in groups, is a great way of developing friendships.

The introductory chapter discusses adornment of open public spaces during Ramadan and other religious festivals, such as Eid Al-Fitr. The traditions carried out during Ramadan make this month more special and enjoyable for Muslims. At the religious events, open public spaces, such as the Al-Balad Area, are used for performing the Taraweeh prayer. All age groups and also females can perform this type of prayer together in the space as the area is safe enough due to the presence of big numbers of people until late evening. Therefore, the need for utilizing these spaces greatly increases during Ramadan and Eid. The demand for Jeddah's open public spaces also significantly increases at the times of pilgrimage. The reason for this is that nearly five million pilgrims travel to the Kingdom yearly, and many pilgrims are also interested in recreational activities in Jeddah after completing pilgrimage.

According to statistical studies, the number of visitors to Old Jeddah by pilgrims and non-Saudis users during religious festivals are significantly higher than the number of visitors to Jeddah. The interest in visiting Old Jeddah can be attributed to its traditional quality and the presence of popular markets and destinations, which reflect historical and traditional features of Jeddah. Additionally, Old Jeddah contains restaurants serving traditional ethnic dishes and stores which sell traditional toys, games and special souvenirs. In fact, the traditional markets of Old Jeddah are relatively similar to Christmas markets popular in the USA and Europe. According to previous research, individuals residing in the West are more interested in participating in indoor activities during religious festivals such as Christmas. Contrarily, individuals of Arab descent are interested in performing religious

rituals and festivals in open spaces. However, there are deficiencies in the design of several open spaces which could be used for such purposes, but lack protective shelters for sudden changes in weather conditions. Moreover, during Ramadan, traffic jams increase considerably, making it difficult to reach public open spaces.

7.2.7 Gender-Related Values in the Saudi Culture and Public Spaces

Males

The discussions with the respondents showed several significant differences in the ways and perceptions of using public spaces based on sex of the user. Although males generally enjoy more privileges according to Saudi cultural and social values, there are some negative aspects which may limit their utilization of open places. For example, there are a few well-developed open spaces which can accommodate male recreational activities.

Moreover, the congregations of adolescent and adult males can bring about noise and disturb others. However, most male adolescents and adults seem to be aware of families and surrounding neighborhoods and, accordingly, try to avoid causing annoyance and disturbance to others. The respectfulness displayed by most Saudi males is based on their well-established social, religious, and cultural values. Most male adolescents who participated in the interviews at recreational areas such as the Al-Balad Area have mentioned that they enjoy their freedom in these spaces. Respectfully, Saudi young males have carried out their recreational activities in specific spots of public spaces to avoid causing disturbances in the spaces usually utilized by females or families. However, the government has strongly emphasized the creation of special spaces for males to carry out their recreational activities separately from females, family congregations, and quiet neighborhoods. The objective of establishing special spaces for males is not to create discrimination between males and females, but to allow them to have recreation without disturbing females or families.

Females

Based on observations and the answers of respondents in the interviews, gender matters negatively affect females compared to males, especially in carrying out physical activities in open spaces in Jeddah. According to the traditions of the Saudi society, it is not acceptable for women to go walking, running, or jogging in public spaces where men are present. Earlier studies carried out in Europe and the West indicate that gender matters impact utilization of public open spaces by males and females. Some studies shed light on the worries and anxiety experienced by women in conservative societies if they participate in outdoor activities (Krenichyn, 2004; Shaw, 2001; Yerkes and Miranda, 1985). However, the Saudi government has recently promoted the role of females, their privileges, and their rights to enjoy freedom within acceptable limits, including giving women the right to play sports or

drive cars. According to the answers of females interviewed at the case study sites, they acquired a higher level of self-assurance and self-esteem when the government and some members of the society began to accept women taking part in outdoor activities. Some female participants have mentioned that their repeated use of the Al Aqsan Plaza is due to the safety and security of this space. Other female participants have mentioned that they might be intimidated or embarrassed while practicing outdoor activities due to the conservatism and traditionalism of certain Saudis who may judge them. Krenichyn (2005) has recommended that the designers of public spaces should take into consideration the physical and psychological needs of females. For example, the designers should create a larger numbers of toilets for women because female participants have mentioned the lack of toilets in public open spaces. Additionally, females often go to public spaces along with their children, who also require bathrooms.

Moreover, the Saudi female dress style in public spaces is completely different from the dress style adopted by women in other countries of the Middle East and the West. The Saudi dress style includes the abaya and hijab. The findings of the present research indicate that some females who walk at the Al Aqsan Plaza are interested in wearing hijabs incorporating brighter colors in order to avoid heat absorption by the material, which is more likely for darker colors. In the opinion of some conservatives, the decision of females to wear bright colors is against Islamic principles. These individuals believe that bright colors make women look more attractive, which is not in line with Islamic values. Krenichyn (2005) highlighted that females are sometimes harassed by males. Therefore, females who walk at the Al Aqsan Plaza attempt to avoid attracting male attention while utilizing the space. For example, they wear modest clothes, and they walk slowly at the side of the footpath (Krenichyn, 2005).

Most participants are aware that practicing physical activities in the open air enables them to increase their physical well-being. In a previous study, Hansmann et al. (2007) found that beyond 90 percent of residents are certain that green landscapes have a positive impact on their physical health and bring about long-term fitness. The present research has resulted in conclusions which correspond to the findings of previous research. Female respondents were asked, "What is the value of public space in your daily life?" According to their answers, females gain various types of advantages from the utilization of public open spaces at social, psychological, and physical levels. For example, public open spaces allow them to make new friends, relieve stress, and achieve physical fitness. Most Saudi female participants have highlighted that walking in open spaces, especially at the Al Aqsan Plaza, makes them feel "free." In turn, this helps them gain more self-confidence and trust in their social value. Based on their answers, females would like Saudi males to accept the prominence of the female role in the Saudi society. Recently, the lifestyle of Saudi females and the manner in which the society interprets their roles, duties, and rights, in general have received much interest. Examining this topic can be an effective means of eliminating the restrictions of conservative members of the society on Saudi females' rights and roles.

7.2.8 Cohesion in Public Open Spaces at the Social Level

All individuals are permitted to enter and use public open spaces, regardless of social class, educational level, age, or sex. While designing and developing the schemes of public open spaces, designers need to consider the diversity of space users to meet their needs. The designs and arrangement of open spaces must help visitors to mingle with each other effectively and participate in common activities. In other words, these spaces should strengthen social relationships and help to achieve social integration. The attributed importance of public spaces differs from one person to another, according to each individual's perception and understanding of the importance of these spaces.

Visitors of open spaces believe that these spaces enable better interaction with different members of the society. During the interviews with the respondents, an elderly Saudi woman mentioned that Saudis do not want non-nationals or non-Saudis to use these spaces, so that Saudis can enjoy the quiet and privacy. However, it is essential to highlight that within the discussions with respondents, this opinion was expressed only one time. Foreign users of public spaces are aware of the importance of these spaces as they constitute the perfect environment for these individuals to mingle with other non-Saudis and Saudi nationals.

7.3 Social Communication and Integration

Earlier studies have introduced evidence that regular social gatherings can greatly facilitate the strengthening of social relationships among family members, neighbors, and all members of the society. Also, social gatherings can help individuals make many acquaintances (Cattel et al., 2007). According to Cattel et al., social communication and integration in several public open spaces in the United Kingdom are informal. Contrarily, social interactions occurring in Jeddah's open spaces are of a warmer, more intimate level. For example, two families coming from two Arab countries could become intimate friends if their children perform common physical activities in open spaces. Another example is the interaction between two non-Saudi families living in Jeddah who could agree on making a trip to Al Rowa Plaza for a barbecue. This pattern of social interaction in public spaces seems to be common and recurrent, especially among non-Saudis. However, this research study did not report similar patterns among Saudi families on a broader scale.

Open spaces allocated for public use also provide important social advantages, such as areas for group fitness and recreational activities. Within these activities, social interaction, communication, and integration can be achieved (Forest Research, 2010). In addition, these spaces can be utilized for creating social gatherings which involve diverse types of residents, especially during religious festivals (Martin et al., 2004).

The population of Jeddah has increased greatly over the last decades due to the increasing numbers of foreign non-Saudis who seek employment in the city, and who now constitute nearly 50% of the city's population. Undoubtedly, the city already embraces a large number of nationals due to its large area in comparison with other Saudi cities, being the second largest city. Based on the comments of Friedrichs and Jagodzinski (1999) on this topic, social interaction can be achieved by non-Saudis more easily since they use public open spaces as an environment which allows them to develop friendships and social relationships with both non-Saudis and nationals (Friedrichs and Jagodzinski, 1999). The obvious interest of non-Saudis in these spaces as a medium of social interaction can be attributed to the opportunity provided by these spaces to express their culture and background. Research conclusions of the present work demonstrate that the majority of non-Saudis are interested in using the same public open spaces which turn into their second home where they can achieve social inclusion (Seeland, 1999). One of the major objectives of the creation of open spaces is the promotion of social integration, which was conveyed through the discussions with non-Saudis using these spaces (Kuo and Sullivan, 2001).

The majority of answers expressed by non-Saudis reveal their perceived social advantages of using open spaces, which can be categorized into four classes: communication with family members and companions, communication with other non-Saudis, communication with users coming from the same home country, and communication with Saudi nationals. The present research reveals that the most prevalent form of social interactions and communication in open spaces is the communication between family members and companions, and communication between non-Saudis coming from the same home country. This conclusion is drawn from discussions and observations at the case study site. Significantly, these four social advantages help to support social relationships, social integration, and unity of open space users. Cattell et al. (2008) expressed that open spaces constitute a perfect environment for facilitating communication among individuals who may have diverse features at the social or cultural levels; however, the beauty and attractive elements of open spaces can help to bridge the gap among them. In general, public spaces help to create a feeling of community and sociability. In fact, social interaction in open spaces plays an important role in reinforcing affection towards these spaces and the city as a whole (Eyles and Litiva, 1998). Noticeably, the social advantages of open spaces have an impact on non-Saudis' well-being at the physical, mental, and psychological levels.

According to the findings of the present study, various public open spaces provide important opportunities for informal or casual social communication among users. Two of these spaces are the Al Aqsan Plaza and the Al Balad Area. In fact, regular use of specific spaces helps users create strong relationships others and broaden their social networks. Additionally, open spaces greatly help individuals from different countries or belonging to different cultures or races understand and accept their differences. According to research conclusions, most non-Saudis use Al Aqsan Plaza, Al Rowa

Plaza, and the Al Balad Area. Despite the advantages of public open spaces, conclusions reflect that relationships between non-Saudis and Saudi nationals are not always fruitful. The reason for this indication is that some Saudis say that the unkempt nature of some public spaces arises from the carelessness of non-Saudi individuals. On the other hand, non-Saudis defend themselves by saying that the carelessness of Saudi nationals is the reason for uncleanliness of certain open spaces.

Saudi Community and the Reliance on Servants

Most Saudis hire servants such as a housemaids or chauffeurs. According to the study observations, many females visit open spaces with their male chauffeur because they are not capable of driving. Chauffeurs usually wait for females or families until they are finished with their physical activities or gatherings, while mingling with other chauffeurs or other people present in the open spaces and develop new social relationships accordingly. Interestingly, some chauffeurs attend barbecues, walk, or carry out any other physical activities in these spaces, especially at the Al Aqsan Plaza. Also, maids usually accompany Saudi families while going to the open spaces and help them take care of their children and cook. The literature review regarding the common forms of utilizing open spaces does not reflect the pattern of bringing servants on journeys to public spaces. It is necessary to highlight that the non-Saudis involved in the observations and interviews were not accompanied by maids while spending time in open spaces. In fact, non-Saudis and non-Saudi families seldom hire female servants, though some non-Saudi mothers are employed as such. However, it is also essential for them to hire a chauffeur due to lack of driving experience stemming from previous long-standing laws forbidding women from driving in the Kingdom.

7.3.1 The Dimension of Each Person

Scannell and Gifford (2010) have proposed that attraction and attachment to a specific place can take place among individuals or groups. This attachment differs from one person to another or from one group to another based on the individual's or group's perception of the place and the attachment to it. Having profound emotional experiences in a place might result in an attachment to it which can be expressed through strong emotions or reactions towards it. In fact, the interests and preferences of individuals or groups determine the form of their attachment to specific places (Bourdieu, 1984). It is, therefore, not surprising that one's personal experience or background constitutes a core factor which determines whether the individuals or groups become emotionally attached a specific place. Additionally, other factors which can influence the occurrence of attachment to a place include duration of time spent there, its population, and its quality. These factors determine how the individual or group users will interact with a place. In general, a positive perception of a specific place can be result when visitors' needs and expectations are met or perhaps even exceeded, allowing them to create positive memories of their experience in the place.

Moreover, the awareness, culture, age, sex, and home country of the individual or group users of public spaces result in either attachment to or detachment from a particular place. The conclusions of this study present the opinions and perspectives of two adult males interviewed in the Al-Balad Area and whose attachment to the place can be attributed to other factors. The first of these interviewees, named Ahmad, is originally from Saudi Arabia. He has mentioned that the reason for his daily visits to the seaside is that they “provide him with positive energy and lift his spirits.” He has referred to the Al-Balad area as his “secret box”. Moreover, Ahmad feels that the sea helps to alleviate his fears and anxiety. The conclusions from the answers of the interviewees demonstrate that most participants believe that Al-Balad is the ideal environment for eliminating psychological stress. The second male interviewee, named Ali, is originally from Egypt, and has decided to live in Jeddah for professional reasons. Ali perceives the Al-Balad area as the perfect place for revisiting his memories in his home country. When he was living in Egypt, Ali frequently visited the seaside, especially at the times when he was feeling the stress and pressure of daily life. These findings demonstrate that Jeddah’s seaside can create a sense of home and security from Saudi residents hailing from other countries.

A young female Saudi participant has expressed that she has a negative perception of a particular public open space located in Jeddah, since her husband was publicly executed there as a legal punishment. Despite her suffering, she is keen on visiting this open space to pray for her dead spouse. This participant has expressed that visiting the open public space causes her to undergo a psychological conflict between her detachment from the place due to witnessing the execution of her husband there and her attachment to it due to it triggering memories of her husband while praying for him. The participant’s attachment to the place and her motivation for visiting it regularly, despite the negative memory of her husband’s death there, may help her feel calm. However, some individuals can judge this participant for her behavior, as Islamic principles state that females should not visit graves. Therefore, the participant was worried for her safety and requested for her identity to remain anonymous. Another female participant has mentioned that although she has a negative perception of this particular place due to her knowledge of the negative events which have occurred there, she can still overcome this negative perception and allows her children to use the space for recreation, since it is adjacent to her residential area.

The responses collected as part of the present research reveal that an individual can become attached to or detached from a specific place according to his/her experience, attitudes, and memories. Also, an individual might be attached to and detached from a specific place due to personal reasons. These patterns of place attachment and detachment are similar to those explained in earlier studies (Manzo, 2003). Based on analysis of interviewee responses, it can be concluded that place attachment can trigger specific feelings and particular memories, and these findings correspond to the results of previous research (Manzo and Perkins, 2006). The social and economic experiences and circumstances of participants also seem to impact their views on open places.

7.3.2 The Dimension of Process

In 2010, Scannell and Gifford focused on the second aspect of attachment to a specific place. This dimension entails three constituents, including behavior, affect, and cognition. Scannell and Gifford believe that place attachment is not related to memories, but their conclusions are questioned by other studies whose researchers ask whether place attachment can occur without having specific memories associated with the place to which the individual is attached. In fact, the concept of “Emotional Memory” proposes that memories can evoke specific emotions upon their recollection (Lerner & Keltner, 1999).

Most participants involved in this study have mentioned that visiting particular open spaces triggers specific memories. For example, participants might remember a specific person while visiting a specific space due to sharing special memories with them there. Others enjoy visiting a particular open space as it reminds them of a special event or celebration which took place there. In this study, a couple coming from Egypt have revealed that visiting the Al Aqsan Plaza helps them evoke positive memories of meeting on the Hilton Footpath after several years of not having seen each other, and consider this space the spot of their reunion. The positive emotional experience evoked from remembering a particular person in a particular space has also been expressed by another female respondent. The female interviewee mentioned that she travels every day from Makkah City to Jeddah City by a car in order to go to the Al Balad Area, where she previously resided with her mother who is now deceased. The participant said making this trip evoked special memories of the times she spent with her mother in the area. These responses provided by participants demonstrate the significance of the process dimension (Manzo, 2005; Scannell and Gifford, 2010).

In fact, according to some studies, changes to open spaces through events such as terrorist activities, natural catastrophes or wars can trigger negative feelings (Fried, 1963; Fullilove, 1996). The phenomenon of experiencing negative feelings or attitudes towards a specific place is not broadly evident in the analysis of the responses of the interviewees. One of the participants has reported experiencing feelings of homesickness, since he had immigrated to Jeddah for work; however, he has not expressed having a negative attitude towards Jeddah, as he appreciates the opportunity to work in this city.

The second element of the process dimension is ((cognition)) reflected by participants through the expression of their thoughts, understanding, and awareness. Cognition can be developed based on the activities practiced by these respondents in open spaces, which can increase their attachment to these spaces or other spaces. In the opinion of Feldman (1990), the attachment of individuals or groups to specific spaces can be based on the type of features contained in these spaces, such as desert spaces, green spaces, or seaside spaces in the urban environment (Feldman, 1990). The concept of a preferred place differs from one respondent to another based on his or her awareness

and his/her individual needs and purposes of utilizing a particular space. The obtained results demonstrate that participants have various preferred places to visit according to particular contexts or events. One conclusion drawn from the discussions with Saudi and non-Saudi participants demonstrates that all participants perceive the Al Balad area and its surroundings as their preferred destination, despite the presence of many negative features.

The attachment to a place as a behavior is the third element of the process dimension. Hay (1998) and Riemer (2004) have mentioned that people living abroad always typically long to be back to their home countries, although this might result in miserable consequences. The conclusions of the study regarding two non-Saudis living in Jeddah contrast to this notion after several years of disengagement. Finally, they got married, so they consider this space the spot of their reunion. Thus, they have a positive perception of this place. The emotional relaxation obtained from remembering a particular person in a particular space has been expressed by another female respondent while being interviewed. This female has mentioned that she travels every day from Makkah City to Jeddah City by a car in order to go to the Al balad Area in the definite place where she used to stay with her dead mother. Going there makes her remember the special moments spent with her mother there. This reflects that although she suffers from losing her mother, the personal memories associated with the Al balad help her to feel better and more relaxed. These responses evidently prove the significance of the process dimension (Manzo, 2005; Scannell and Gifford, 2010).

Two male participants, Khaled, originally from Jordan and Othman, originally from Sudan, have both clarified that they do not wish to return to their home countries. Their responses signify stronger attachment to Jeddah compared to their home countries. These observations are similar to those of a study carried out by Hidalgo and Hernandez in 2001, which demonstrated that despite a positive relationship between a person and a particular place (such as their home country), miserable economic, social, or political conditions can drive this individual to lose attachment to it and relocate elsewhere. For example, some individuals living in developing impoverished countries are forced to leave their homes for working abroad (Hidalgo and Hernandez, 2001). During the interview with Khaled, he had expressed that he did not want to leave Jeddah. Moreover, Othman has expressed that he perceived Jeddah's atmosphere as his "second home." These participants' responses highlight the notion that attachment to a specific place can be territorial and based on the attainment of self-sense in that place, as previously suggested by Altman (1975).

The idea of reconstruction is a behavioral term of place attachment, which can exist in different patterns. One pattern of reconstruction can be observed when residents of a particular place are driven to dwell in another place despite their attachment to the former one. Relocation can take place due to unexpected factors which are out of the residents' control, such as the occurrence of natural catastrophes. However, examining specific reasons for participants' immigration is beyond the scope of the present study. Another pattern of reconstruction can be observed when residents of a

particular place decide to relocate to another area, which they choose due to its close resemblance (Michelson, 1976). This pattern is, for example, often adopted by non-Saudis living in Jeddah. This study reveals that the majority of Sudanese, Jordanian, Egyptian, Lebanese, and Syrian non-Saudis prefer to live in Jeddah rather than in other Saudi cities, as it is associated with features resembling their home towns, such as the presence of coastline and seaside areas. According to one young male participant from Alexandria, Egypt, this pattern is relevant to him. He has mentioned his interest in visiting Jeddah's Al Balad Area as it has the spirit of his home town. Moreover, several participants originating from the Philippines also showed interest in visiting the same space by the seaside due to the presence of Manila palms, which closely resemble palm trees from their home countries. Furthermore, Syrian respondents have expressed that they prefer going to Jeddah's Al Rowa Plaza due to its warm atmosphere and its similarity to some Syrian destinations. An elderly Lebanese male participant reported perceiving the Al Rowa Plaza as a place resembling a Lebanese garden due to its concrete form, which motivated him to visit this space. In general, Risbeth and Finney (2006) have described plants and vegetation as attractive constituents that make people more attached to public spaces and evoke recollections of green areas in their home countries. In other words, creating green spaces public open spaces effectively helps to create an emotional relationship between city residents and the open spaces.

7.3.3 The Dimension of Place

The features of a place represent a core factor for developing an individual's or a group's attachment to a particular place. This section is aimed at explaining the elements and scope of this subject matter. The conclusions drawn from the observations and discussions with respondents reveal that the experience and history of each participant in various places influence the way and the degree to which he or she becomes attached to a particular place. An elderly Saudi female participant reported visiting the Al-Mahmal Plaza on a frequent basis because it reminded her of the Al Balad Area and Saudi history. This observation suggests the participant's sense of belonging to traditional places. She reported being more interested in the traditional structure of the city than the features of current urban development because she witnessed traditional places in her youth. In addition to reminding her of the old town, she also reported a sense of attachment to the Al-Mahmal Plaza⁶² because there, it permits gatherings with her friends and family. In other words, her attachment to the plaza is associated with the historical elements of the place and social interaction opportunities. These conclusions are also reported by other studies examining mixed place attachment based on a mixture of physical and social factors (Uzzell et al., 2002; Mazumdar and Mazumdar, 2004).

In fact, the physical qualities of a place can reflect values such as heritage, history, culture, or honorable lineage. Also, these features can trigger personal memories which contribute to the

⁶² The Al-Mahal Center is one of the most important commercial centers in Jeddah and the Al-Balad area

development of a stronger attachment to specific places (Stedman, 2003). For example, the concrete pattern in the Al Rowa Plaza reflects a significant meaning from the perspective of the elderly Lebanese male participant mentioned above. The meaning represented by the space is the heritage of a Lebanese landmark based on a concrete pattern, demonstrating that the participant has established a mental link between the Al Rowa Plaza and a Lebanese landmark based on the similarity of their physical properties. Also, the physical properties of Al Rowa Plaza help the Syrian respondents recall their homeland due to possessing similar physical features, such as the masses of trees and plants (Scannell and Gifford, 2010).

Being attached to particular spaces can additionally take place in light of the individual's historical and cultural background. For example, due to growing up in a country which is originally a desert region, Saudis can become attached to the desert nature, which can motivate them to frequently visit desert destinations in Jeddah. This explains that the attachment of Saudis to the desert can be attributed to their heritage and history.

Place attachment can also occur due to a long period spent in a particular place. Although non-Saudis can feel homesick at the beginning of their stay in a foreign country, they can also become attached to their new country, especially after residing there for many years. For example, the answers of Othman and Ali concerning the reasons for their attachment to Jeddah reveal that one of the reasons living there for half of their lives. Also, their answers signify that they no longer harbor any attachment to their home countries. These conclusions are important because they reflect that place attachment is not always relevant to one's home country, but it can be a result of their growing loyalty to any country which accommodated them for a long time and where they have made social connections.

7.4 The Ways of Planning, Designing, and Managing Open Spaces

The fast-paced growth of the size of Jeddah's population has necessitated the implementation of wide-scale urban development plans, including development of green landscapes throughout the city. Unfortunately, this has not been accomplished by the Jeddah Municipality. In fact, Jeddah's urban development plans only encompass an interest in the establishment of residential areas, which have a few green landscapes. This research demonstrates that residents are expected to gain endless advantages if there are well-developed open spaces in their modern neighborhoods.

No doubt, well-planned urban development is usually associated with numerous advantages, such as stronger social relationships and better mental and physical health among residents. Saudi cities, including Jeddah, exist in a challenging environment due to the presence of several desert areas and extremely high temperatures, making urban development challenging in this environment. The development of Jeddah's urban environment necessitates planning public open spaces which have

effective water irrigation systems for developing green landscapes. The lack of green areas in the city can make its urban environment visually unappealing, as well as contribute to higher temperatures and pollution in the area.

The conclusions with regard to open spaces mentioned in previous sections show that green landscapes constitute an important factor for strengthening the social life and interactions of open space users. Green areas can help visitors of public spaces to gain a sense of relaxation and peace of mind and thereby, promote social interactions. Significantly, there is a strong relationship between green areas and the achievement of mental and physical well-being among residents of the urban environment. Accordingly, it is essential that green areas become developed in open spaces, especially in cities or countries associated with extremely high temperatures, such as Jeddah.

The Municipality of Jeddah is responsible for developing an adequate number of well-developed green landscapes to promote the image of the city's entire urban environment. Unfortunately, the current open spaces and recreational areas in Jeddah need improvement and should be initially based on systematic distribution plans to ensure their creation in the city in an organized way and placement near most or all residential areas. After implementing this recommendation, the municipality should consider the optimal strategies of developing green areas within the city's structure. Within an urban development plan, the demands of residents should be identified and taken into consideration. Moreover, one of the main objectives which should be incorporated into these plans is the creation of harmony between public and private spaces and institutions.

The dissimilarity between the forms of utilizing Jeddah's open spaces and those of utilizing open spaces in the West are clarified previously this chapter. It is necessary to note that the aspects of this dissimilarity are thoroughly identified and taken into consideration by the municipality officials, contractors, developers, and managers of open spaces. The present thesis provides an explanation of the methods of utilizing Jeddah's open spaces adopted by nationals and non-Saudis. If these forms and ways of utilizing open spaces are taken into consideration during creation of new open spaces, they can help to promote positive features of future public open spaces and avoid the deficiencies in the current spaces. By improving the features of public spaces, residents' satisfaction with these spaces will increase, and their negative behaviors in these spaces, such as throwing rubbish carelessly, can be reduced.

The patterns of utilizing public spaces in the West and in Europe are different from those prevailing in Jeddah and Saudi Arabia as a whole due to the cultural differences between the two regions. Cultural values affect the methods of utilizing open spaces. This necessitates focused studies of Saudi cultural values and traditions for optimal open space design.

It is essential to develop an effective mass of well-planned landscape structures in the Kingdom. The

Saudi government should promote and support the qualifications of Saudi landscape professionals, thereby reducing the need for Western landscape professionals. Saudi consultants are surely more capable of expressing the needs of residents with regard to urban context in terms of design and structure. It is also important to consider the cosmopolitan features of the city while planning its landscape structure. It has become obvious that the deficiencies in the city's public open spaces are due to the inadequacy of highly qualified urban development specialists and the insignificant role of residents and the private sector in this urban development process. It is strongly recommended to draw in local communities and stakeholders in planned and designing the urban environment. This has been implemented in several countries, which have demonstrated the success of this method. Unfortunately, this can be hardly achieved in Saudi Arabia due to the present political conditions.

This section presents directions and suggestions regarding the development of the methods of planning, outlining, and managing open spaces, particularly in Jeddah, in addition to other Saudi cities. The directions and suggestions provided were developed in accordance to the conclusions presented in this thesis. There are four major focus aspects to deal with the deficiencies in the creation of open spaces and avoid them in the future creation of new spaces, including development of planning strategies, development of the design phases, creation of effective management systems, and the promotion of the municipality's responsibilities with regard to urban development designs and plans.

7.4.1 Suggestions about Improving Open Spaces Schemes and Layouts

Order of Green Open Spaces

It is essential to create open spaces of various proportions in the city. The findings of the present study show that there are inadequate open spaces in residential areas in Jeddah. Therefore, the creation of a bigger number of green open spaces in the city is strongly recommended, as it can greatly help to eliminate several issues in connection with the patterns of using public spaces. For example, developing more green landscapes can help to reduce the excessive use of several spaces such as the Al Balad area. It is also recommended to develop green open areas and playgrounds in residential areas for children to play and gather safely. Also, the presence of more attractive public spaces near residential blocks can help reduce car use. Nowadays, Jeddah has a broad group of public open spaces, some of which are examined in this research. Jeddah's Al Balad area is perceived as the city's major public pace due to its large area in comparison with other public spaces. However, examining the Al Balad area reflects that accessibility to this area is difficult and requires an upgrade.

This study also examines the quality of the open spaces, which exist inside and outside the city's urban environment. The conclusions of the study revealed that open spaces in residential areas are not adequately supported by Jeddah's municipality. It is undeniable that some residential areas are

enclosed by gardens and open spaces, but their features are deficient because of their poor design. It is, therefore, necessary to upgrade the gardens of these residential areas so that residents will be more motivated to utilize them. Urban developers are urged to make the development of green spaces their priority. They should be keen on creating green open spaces where a variety of active and passive recreational activities can be practiced. Moreover, they should focus on establishment of footpaths which facilitate movement from public open spaces to central areas and residential areas. This can help upgrade the arrangement of open spaces in Jeddah, which would permit residents to enjoy a variety of public places throughout the week.

The Creation of Green Spaces

According to the World Health Organization⁶³, each person requires at least eight square meters of open green space. However, existing green spaces in Jeddah are considerably below this recommendation, with only two square meters of open green space per resident in the majority of neighborhoods. Because the number of city residents is quickly growing, the need for many types of open spaces, including green spaces and recreational facilities, is growing.

Successful urban development plans, schemes, and designs can help to develop optimal open spaces which constitute an integral element of the city's infrastructure system and promote the development of the city's green system.

This research recommends that the physical appearance of the city can be improved by dealing with the deficiencies in the networks among the city's open spaces. Evidently, Jeddah residents suffer from traffic congestion which they encounter on their journeys to public spaces. Research suggests that the municipality can establish more effective channels among the city's open spaces so that the need for using cars to reach open spaces can be reduced. Also, these networks should include well-developed pathways in order to motivate more residents to reach open spaces on foot. The municipality is recommended to make use of abandoned spaces near schools, clubs, or any other places in Jeddah for building effective networks among open public spaces. Empty lands can be incorporated into the entire open space development system to improve the urban environment of residential areas. This step can also upgrade the quality of the city's streetscape, walkways, and pavements.

According to the findings of the present study, developing the schemes of Jeddah's open spaces is implemented in a detached manner from the development of the entire urban environment. The reason for this finding is that many of the city's open spaces are not well incorporated within the nearby buildings and residential areas due to the lack of walking paths connecting open spaces to

⁶³ The World Health Organization (WHO) is a specialized agency of the United Nations that is concerned with international public health. It was established on 1948, and with headquarters in Geneva, Switzerland.

residential areas and central buildings. As previously discussed, it is necessary to develop an open spaces system whose major objective is the reinforcement of reachability to these spaces. Also, it is strongly recommended to connect open spaces with nearby buildings and neighborhoods.

Development of Streetscape

The development of an effective open space system and a green landscape network should involve upgrading of the city's streetscape as a fundamental objective. Unfortunately, Jeddah's streetscape is presently given little attention by the municipality. The presence of effective streetscape in the city can pave the way for greater access to open spaces. Jeddah's present streetscape is deficient. Based on the discussion with an official of the municipality, it appears the municipality is not interested in the improvement of the city's streetscape because few residents walk on foot, and it would be necessary to allocate significant portions of the budgets for the development of the features of streets. On the contrary, the conclusions of the study indicate that many of Jeddah's residents enjoy walking, and would be more interested in walking if the features of sidewalks were created.

Furthermore, the municipality should develop streets which are wide enough to facilitate the movement of pedestrians and motivate them to walk on foot. One of the problems associated with the city's pavement is its narrow width, which is estimated at 0.45m, and is not in line with the recommended standards of streetscape⁶⁴ development. Another deficiency of the city's pavement is related to its height. According to the opinions of several residents, some sidewalks are too high to be reached by the elderly, disabled, children and pregnant women. One of the municipality officials has explained that the selected height of these pavements is aimed at the prevention of motor vehicles from moving on them as a way of violating traffic regulations.

While developing the schemes and layouts of the city's pavements, it is essential to consider the prevailing climate of the country. For example, it is strongly recommended to create shady pavements using palm trees or trees in order to protect pedestrians from the sun. These shaded pavements should be established in a systematic way, which means that the forms of shades and the distance between the elements used for shading should be carefully calculated.

Outdoor Recreational Activities

The literature review demonstrates that if performance of physical recreational activities in open spaces is encouraged, more people would be motivated to use these spaces on a frequent basis, thus promoting social interaction. Accordingly, the municipality should take into consideration various types of activities carried out in open spaces. This encouragement can be implemented in the form of establishing walking and jogging trails, well-developed playgrounds, football fields, etc. The

⁶⁴ Streetscape is a term that is used to describe the natural and built fabric of the street, and is defined as the design quality of the street and its visual effect.

construction of these areas should be primarily considered while preparing the initial layout of the open spaces. It is essential that these areas fulfill the demands of both genders and all age groups.

The conclusions of this research reveal that residents tend to prefer participating in various activities in open spaces rather than in indoor places. However, this fact is not taken into account largely within open spaces development plans. It is undeniable that some of the city's open spaces include children's playing areas and sports fields for adults, but these areas have been planned haphazardly. For example, some spaces include playing fields of very small sizes, which cannot meet the needs of the existing populations, leading to overcrowding, tension, and inconvenience. Consequently, it is essential to equip these spaces with playing fields of appropriate sizes designed according to the nearby population density. In addition, walking pathways should be given sufficient care, as they can greatly encourage more people to walk and improve their fitness level. Three elements should be well considered while developing walking pathways: their width, length, and overall form. More effective walking pathways will motivate residents to use open spaces and the walking pathways. In order to persuade users of public open spaces to perform fitness exercises or any form of physical recreational exercises, exercise equipment and tools such as swings should be provided in these spaces.

It is commonly known that 'football' is watched and played by a large segment of Saudi nationals and non-Saudis living in the Kingdom. In spite of this, the conclusions of the study reveal that the majority of Kingdom residents play football in the streets among residential areas, in open spaces which have not been developed for this aim, as well as in neglected lands, or in privately owned football fields. As such, playing football in spaces unfit for exercise can be dangerous and cause disturbances to other residents. The creation of public well-developed football fields in residential areas can greatly dissuade people from playing in places unfit for such activities. This step can additionally pave the way for the launch of official sports events in the Kingdom. It is also necessary to take into consideration other sports which interest foreign non-Saudis, such as cricket, which is preferred by Indian non-Saudis. Thus, these sports should be considered while developing open spaces, as non-Saudis living in the Kingdom constitute an important element of the Saudi community.

7.4.2 Suggestions to Develop the Design Features of Open Space

The survey conducted regarding open spaces reveals the presence of important deficiencies in landscape design. It is strongly recommended that the design of open spaces should fulfill the recreational demands, as well as physical and psychological needs of all the classes and age groups in society. The landscape design should be based on the principle of accessibility. Moreover, landscape design should comply with aesthetic principles to highlight their natural beauty. Further, the designs of landscapes should not be monotonous and should be varied enough to meet the varied needs of the city residents. In addition, these landscapes should be safe enough for all users

and their children to use.

Moreover, the public sector should collaborate with the private sector in order to promote the design features of Jeddah's open spaces within a short period of time. The potential of the two sectors to develop landscape designs is great, since they are in contact with a large number of experts and specialists in the landscape design field; however, their skills are not well utilized and supported. Public space designers of public landscapes should be primarily aware of the purposes of the development of each landscape and characteristics and needs of residents for whom each landscape is developed to achieve optimal results.

Designs Developed for Meeting Social Needs

According to the conclusions of several studies including those of Van Herzele and Wiedemann (2003); Warde et al. (2004); Parr (2007), public open spaces are the ideal environment for achievement of social integration and interaction, which can result in social closeness and intimacy. That is why designers should prioritize social communication while developing the open space layouts and schemes. In general, designers should be aware of the residents' needs, demands, and expectation by staying in contact with members of the society through performance of regular surveys. Also, designers can stay abreast of residents' needs through browsing relevant social media pages. The elements and tools necessary for physical activities which can be carried out in landscapes can be determined based on the social structure for each residential area and its demographics.

In general, the design of public open spaces determines whether these spaces will flourish or not. Designers of public open spaces should be knowledgeable enough regarding the residents' needs as they pertain to their sex, age, physical capabilities, and psychological features.

"Privacy" is a core element to be considered by designers. According to the study findings, there is a large segment of Saudi nationals who adhere to conservatism, necessitating the creation of private female areas within public open spaces to protect females from harassment by male strangers. Some Saudis need privacy within open public spaces for enjoying the tranquility or for having special private moments with their beloved family or friends.

Open spaces should have visually appealing elements of landscape such as pools, vegetation, and plants in order to avoid architectural monotony which might discourage people from visiting them. The conclusions show that most respondents enjoy visiting green landscapes as they help alleviate their feelings of stress. Also, green spaces, especially trees, are utilized in open spaces as attractive spots where family members can gather. Besides, visitors in open spaces need to find palm or other

trees for shade. There are two strongly recommended types of green plants and flowers which should be utilized for the decoration of the city's open spaces: *Plumeria Rubra* and *Callistemon Viminalis*.

It is also necessary to incorporate water elements and their related features, such as the sound of running water, into public open spaces. Significantly, water boosts attractiveness and glamour of open spaces. Creation of sitting areas in open spaces is also strongly recommended. The importance of these areas lies in enabling users to gather, relax, or watch their children. Also, establishment of a sufficient number of water closets should be taken into account. Further, the designed open spaces must fulfill the demands of residents needing special quiet areas for praying.

Value of the Accessible Design of Open Spaces

The design features of public open spaces must embrace the feature of accessibility or reachability, allowing residents to reach these spaces from most points in the city. The conclusions of this research show that the concept of accessibility to public open spaces is associated with ease of reaching public spaces by disabled and elderly individuals. The research findings demonstrate that currently, the needs of these individuals are not taken into consideration within the process of designing open spaces. The objective of developing public open spaces can be easily reached by these individuals must become prioritized. Also, there should be an implementation of effective design of open spaces to prevent traffic accidents or congestion. By doing so, the accessibility to these spaces can be easily achieved. The entrance to open spaces needs to meet the needs of residents using wheelchairs and mothers using baby carriages. In this regard, the heights of public space entrance should be associated with curbs whose edges are near the road so that wheelchairs or baby carriages can be pushed easily.

Design Aesthetics

By fulfilling major principles of architectural aesthetics while providing public open spaces, Jeddah residents can be easily encouraged to utilize and enjoy open spaces. The municipality of Jeddah should adopt and apply these aesthetic approaches to improve the esthetic value of Jeddah's public open spaces. These approaches should be additionally applied to the appearance of streetscape and any other public elements, such as pavements and roundabouts. According to Maller et al. (2002), the creation of charming and glamorous open spaces can dazzle visitors.

The aesthetics of open spaces can be improved by utilizing attractive greenery. One of the main values of aesthetics is achieving diversity in landscape constituents. The well-planned diversity of colors should be applied to the physical appearance of open spaces in order to avoid physical monotony. One of the exceptionally beautiful landscapes in Jeddah is the Al Aqsan Plaza, which incorporates a unique topography that gives a sense of climbing sense for individuals observing it.

Unfortunately, the wide-scale dependence on cars in Jeddah results in distortion of the physical appearance of open spaces, specifically the areas surrounding open spaces. For example, the Al Balad area is usually surrounded by traffic congestion. This problem can be overcome by dealing with the deficiencies in the public transport network. In general, a beautiful landscape appearance can be achieved by regular maintenance of open spaces and streets.

Constituents of Landscape

Nowadays, most of Jeddah's public open spaces are not associated with satisfactory design features. For example, the design features of the Al Balad area do not include adequate interest in making the sea/water element more visible, hindering visitors' view and contact with the water. This indicates that the design phase of public open spaces should be based on effective typology and understanding of the nature of open space and its surroundings. Thus, visually appealing elements existing in or around a public place could be efficiently shown.

The survey regarding open spaces shows that the types of greenery utilized near the main roads and open spaces are small and monotonous. The utilization of the same type of decorative plants has resulted in physically uniform, monotonous, and dull appearance of open spaces. The utilization of a diversity of decorative plants in public open spaces can promote the diversification of the physical features of the city. Open space designers should be knowledgeable about the various forms and sizes of plants in order to choose the appropriate plants, of proportions that are suitable for the surrounding areas and buildings. In 1992, Geoffrey Ricks released a guide to the development and arrangement of landscape plants in Saudi Arabia. Within this manual, it is recommended to cultivate a diversity of plant types, especially in the climate of cities associated with high humidity and heat, such as in the Kingdom. In Jeddah, the types of plants which can resist drought should be developed around the main streets of Jeddah, as they can improve the appearance of streets, provide shading and decrease the presence of dust. The implementation of this step should be accompanied by the application of water-saving irrigation systems.

The utilization of suitable and optimal level landscape constituents in Jeddah's open spaces is presently absent in the sites included in the survey. The features of the ground, the footpaths, and sidewalks existing in or around open spaces should be given greater attention in order to promote the reachability to open spaces. Generally speaking, the accomplishment of creating appealing open spaces is possible if a comprehensive maintenance program is applied, also improving the physical features of the entire city.

Safety Features of the Designs of Open Spaces

The layout and planned structure of open spaces and footpaths should fulfill the needs of users to be secure and safe. The elements of security and safety should be well established in open spaces and in nearby areas. For example, the public open recreational spaces enclosed by commercial institutions and neighborhoods should be comprehensively monitored through the installation of high-quality surveillance cameras. Also, safety could be established by developing open spaces and unobstructed, open pathways. However, it is essential to maintain equilibrium between this recommendation and the fulfillment of some residents' need for privacy.

One of the serious issues threatening the safety of residents visiting Jeddah's open public spaces is road traffic. Accordingly, it is important to create open spaces which exist at a distance from traffic congestion in order to ensure safety, as well as quietness and fresh air. In the current open spaces, it is necessary to develop effective rules and regulations for setting limitations on traffic speed near commonly utilized open spaces and pavements to promote users' safety. The layout of open spaces should additionally embrace the development of sitting areas near children's playing grounds, so their parents can watch them and ensure their safety.

7.4.3 Suggestions to Upgrade the Management System of Open Space

The suggestions in connection with the layout and structure of open spaces include development of a group of high-level guidelines for the management of public open spaces, along with specifications for facilities which should be available in or around the open spaces. Moreover, encouragement of private investors in addition to volunteers to take part in the improvement of open spaces can help to further develop the management systems of public open spaces to make them more attractive, beneficial, and usable. Also, implementing these changes could help to boost the tourism sector and the Saudi economy.

Strategies of Maintenance

Creation of public open spaces is not limited to the execution of these spaces, since continuous maintenance is required. In fact, if any features of these spaces become dissatisfactory with the course of time, users will gradually become discouraged from utilizing them. Generally speaking, Saudi Arabia has not managed to develop effective regulations in connection with utilizing open spaces and an adequate number of high-level maintenance and preservation programs for these spaces. In the present, there is an engagement of private investors in the process of creating and maintaining open spaces (Mandeli, 2011). Maintenance programs have generated insufficient interest because they require considerable costs in comparison with revenues gained from these spaces, leading to poor maintenance of many open spaces. Therefore, it is necessary to create comprehensive maintenance programs which encompass the objectives of preserving plants and

green areas, creating lighting systems, keeping sidewalks in good condition, protecting playing fields from climate factors, and maintaining all the other elements, such as furniture and toilets, in good condition. Ideally, the recommended open space maintenance programs should be an outcome of the collaboration between municipalities and the private sector.

Community Efforts

Based on the answers gathered from relevant interviews and the observations, some users of public open spaces are not keen on keeping these spaces clean. This indicates that there should be an emphasis placed on raising the public's awareness on the importance of keeping the open spaces clean and in good condition. In this regard, there should be awareness-raising campaigns to demonstrate the relevance of open spaces to people's mental, physical, and psychological health. Additionally, these campaigns should help the public to understand that using open spaces can improve their quality of life by benefitting their national economy. It is essential to point out that there is a Saudi law which prohibits throwing rubbish in open spaces carelessly; however, it is not enforced strictly. Thus, it is necessary to ensure enforcement of this law in order to eliminate the habit of getting rid of rubbish in open spaces and regain the beautiful civilized appearance of these spaces. Also, this problem necessitates revolutionizing cultural values in order to improve individuals' behavior in public spaces.

Programs of Activities in Open Spaces

As previously discussed, it is necessary to develop open spaces with features which allow open recreational activities, such as playing football. It has also been recommended to upgrade the features of existing open spaces and development of new open spaces with features which would allow the launch of important events, such as festivals, galleries, fairs, and other national or private events. Jeddah Old Downtown, which is commonly referred to as Al Balad, is often used for organization of several activities and events, mainly during Ramadan. This concept should be applied to other open spaces, particularly during Ramadan, in order to lower traffic congestion and street overcrowding, which are common issues prevailing throughout Ramadan.

Creation of Amenities

In Saudi Arabian cities, there is a constantly growing need for creation of public open spaces. Obviously, Saudis are interested in enjoying activities in open spaces rather than in indoor places. Accordingly, it is necessary to create open spaces and include amenities to increase residents' level of comfort in these spaces. Examples of core amenities that should be made available in open spaces include water closets, mini stores, furniture, and prayer areas. The plans of amenities should be created according to the numbers of expected users. According to the findings of this study, several users of open spaces, and particularly non-Saudis, usually bring their personal chairs, tables,

or umbrellas on their journeys to open spaces. This indicates the lack of amenities in these spaces, causing inconvenience for visitors and forcing them to carry their tools.

7.4.4 Promotion of the Role Played by the Municipality of Jeddah With Regard to Designing Public Open Spaces

Based on the conclusions of studies which assessed the performance of the Municipality of Jeddah and its contributions to the production and maintenance of public open spaces, it appears there is inadequate awareness displayed by the municipality regarding the potential for improvement of the residents' quality of life by providing them with beneficial and usable public open spaces (Mandeli, 2011). It is undeniable that the Jeddah Open Space Strategy reflects the municipality's commitment to the creation and maintenance of public open spaces. However, the municipality needs to be more aware of the advantageous elements which should be incorporated into these spaces, so that users can benefit from them. Enhancing the municipality's knowledge of the commonly targeted advantages of open spaces and the necessity to provide these advantages can be accomplished through forums and conferences in which the municipality's officials, decision-makers, designers, and developers should be involved and in which they can gain awareness of these matters. Also, the municipality's designers could be provided with training in the best techniques for developing useful open spaces by major institutions, such as the Landscape Architecture Department⁶⁵ of the King Abdulaziz University, along with private competent institutions. By raising the municipality's awareness of these important concepts, its role in providing public open spaces can become greater, leading to improved outcomes.

The main reason for deficient planning and execution of open spaces is the fact that missions of open space designs and layouts are handled by the municipality's General Department rather than by competent architectural specialists or landscape experts. Accordingly, the municipality is strongly urged to assign the missions of creating, designing, and managing open spaces to experts with great experience in connection with these missions.

In the present, there are inadequate open spaces and recreational facilities for fulfilling the diverse needs of Jeddah's residents. Thus, many residents seek recreation in informal spaces such as abandoned lands near schools or mosques. In order to eliminate this phenomenon, the municipality should develop a comprehensive open space development program for the purpose of boosting the numbers of recreational open space and developing multi-purpose spaces for meeting the needs of all residents. Any open space development program must include the objective of implementing networks among the city's new and existing open spaces, so that users can reach and move to and from these spaces easily, without encountering traffic congestion. The development of sidewalks

⁶⁵Landscape Architecture Department: a scientific department in the Faculty of Environmental Design, responsible for graduating specialized landscape designers, as the researcher is a Faculty member in this department.

should constitute an important segment of the development program, as they play a significant role in helping residents reach open spaces on foot easily and safely. In this respect, the first step that the municipality should take is carrying out a thorough survey of the present open spaces to detect their deficiencies, come up with relevant methods for overcoming these deficiencies, and determine how to connect them with new open spaces. Furthermore, the municipality should keep its fingers on the pulse of the needs of residents with regard to public open spaces and their feedback on any development carried out by the municipality in these spaces. This can help the municipality to become aware of successful implementation of open spaces in the future and strategies for efficient upgrading the existing ones.

It is strongly recommended that the open space development plans implemented in Jeddah are based on the unique nature of the city. In other words, each Saudi city should be associated with particular features of landscape development which are determined based on the characteristics of each city and its population. In the United Kingdom, each city has its special open space development guide based on relevant information gathered regarding the demands of the residents of each city, their common ways of utilizing open spaces, and the climate. Accordingly, the Municipality of Jeddah should make use of the expertise of landscape development specialists and open space designers in order to produce a meaningful and optimal guide containing the best methods of creating open spaces in Jeddah. This guide should be also developed according to the studies and surveys carried out in Jeddah's open spaces and surrounding areas for the purpose of identifying the demands of residents and the forms of using these spaces. By creating a comprehensive guide for the development of public open spaces in Jeddah, the city's entire open space network can be revolutionized.

7.5 Summary

This chapter contains a discussion of the discrepancy in the forms of utilizing Jeddah's public open spaces based on temporality, identity, and specialty. These conclusions are in line with the objectives of this study since they evaluate the ways of using open spaces displayed by nationals and non-Saudis living in the urban atmosphere of Saudi Arabia. Other conclusions are related to social dimensions. Additionally, this chapter explains how Jeddah's public open space system can be enhanced for fulfilling the demands of users according to these conclusions. The chapter includes an explanation of Jeddah's street structure, creation of green landscapes, open recreational practices, open space designs in line with social demands and reachability, landscape constituents and security, recommendations about the improvement of open space management strategies and maintenance programs, importance of raising community awareness of the value of open spaces, organization of events in open spaces, creation of adequate amenities in these spaces, and promotion of the contributions of the Municipality of Jeddah to the design features of open spaces. The next chapter introduces the findings of this research, as well as its limitations.

CHAPTER EIGHT
CONCLUSION

CHAPTER EIGHT

CONCLUSION

8.1 Introduction

The present thesis has introduced novel findings, particularly with regard to social life in public open spaces in Jeddah, by examining the quality and design of open spaces. The study was conducted at case study locations in the city of Jeddah by using a mixed-method approach that included interviews with specialists and on-site interviews, in addition to observations. In this concluding chapter, the impact and importance of the study are explained, determining dissemination opportunities and influences on the experience of the researcher conducting this study.

The main findings related to each research aim are summarized as follows:

1. Research Aim 1: To explore how and why people use designed public open spaces in the urban context of Jeddah city.
2. Research Aim 2: To explore what is the role of modern public spaces compared to traditional public spaces of Jeddah city in the formation of a platform for social interaction.
3. Research Aim 3: 3) To determine some of the implications for improved planning and design of public open spaces In line with government plans and actors in decision-making to meet the requirements of users within the Jeddah city context, thus contribute to bring back the social life to those spaces.

The summaries of main findings give priority to aspects which are different from the commonly observed findings of research in North America and Europe.

8.2 How And Why People Use Designed Public Open Spaces In The Urban Context Of Jeddah City.

Saudi and non-Saudi users often visit designed open spaces which meet their needs or in the spaces that they find on their way, such as roundabouts and sidewalks, but mostly Saudi families use desert areas because they offer more privacy, providing greater freedom for females. Although the quality and design of these open spaces often do not meet their standards, they still offer some advantages.

Generally, the present research revealed some positive experiences reported by women using open spaces, in particular, being able to exercise in a comfortable outfit, implying the strong desire of women in the Kingdom to practice more outdoor physical activities. The gender factor has a great

impact in relation to how open spaces are used in terms of their spatial and temporal dimensions and certain motivating factors to use specific locations, as indicated in the literature review. This study promotes the knowledge of use patterns for females and males in open spaces in Jeddah, which is an Arab city controlled by Islamic law and enforces a number of gender-specific regulations. This study found that, despite the limitations of the activity and movement of women by the legal situation, both men and women have adapted their use of open spaces to suit cultural standards; for example, women avoid using open space in the evening, when men use these spaces more. Ilahi (2010) argues that the experiences of males and females are different in social space in Islamic countries.

Most participants have suggested that public open spaces can serve as a platform to encourage the integration of immigrants into the Saudi Arabian society, but the social interactions and use patterns observed in open spaces indicated that Saudi and non-Saudi users prefer to interact within their own cultural demographics. Social interactions and use patterns of study locations showed that Saudi users visited these locations as individual users, in family groups, and in groups of friends of the same gender. On the contrary, the social interactions and patterns of immigrants' use of public open spaces often indicated that they gathered with others of the same nationality in order to reminisce of their home and speak the same language. This contributes to previous research on how the environment helps migrants integrate into a new society (Powell and Rishbeth, 2012).

This research found that culture was an important element for forming social life and interactions within the context of an Arab and Islamic city, which corroborates the findings of Altman and Low (1992), which demonstrate that individuals associate specific places with cultural attributes. These findings are related to previous research of relationships between individuals and open spaces, and immigrants' attempts to evoke memories of home through open spaces elements that encourage relationships with these spaces. They also provide valuable new information to support the findings of Scannell and Gifford (2010), demonstrating that the type and degree of attachment of the open space differ and are founded on properties such as characteristics, size, and scale, together with user's gender, age, social life, and relationships.

This research sheds light on the frequent use by the people of Jeddah of gardens of residential areas and unplanned and incidental open spaces, such as small spaces at roadside, for gathering and recreation, which defies the findings of Hillsdon et al. (2007) which excluded smaller open spaces. These findings are supported by previous studies of social life in open spaces within the context of Western countries, but they give valuable insights into the spatial and temporal dimensions that differ from the dimensions in many countries in the Middle East, and especially in the city of Jeddah. The research indicates that, while there are contrasts in the usage pattern and social interaction of open spaces that exist between the study findings and the North American and European collection of literature, the value and benefits of open spaces described share common features, but this contradicts the findings of Kathiravelu (2013), who suggested that open spaces in cities with various

communities encourage socializing between immigrants and Saudis, as Saudi and immigrant users typically prefer to use the space and gather separately.

8.3 To explore what is the role of modern public spaces compared to traditional public spaces of Jeddah city in the formation of a platform for social interaction.

There are insufficient studies of social interaction in open spaces within the Saudi Arabian context and in other Arab countries, despite being an important area in other disciplines. However, the present study indicates that the patterns of social interactions in open spaces have many similarities when comparing the findings of this research those of Western studies, which examine social interactions in open spaces and suggest intercultural relevance of this theory.

The contribution of the observed usage pattern and social interaction to this study is the provision of a clearer understanding of the dimension of social life in the studied sites. The gathered research uncovered findings that the concept of social interaction in open spaces could be applied to various cultural situations, such as the special qualities of the social interactions that occur during religious practices, and provides additional data for investigations into the ethnographic factors and the population growth of fast urbanization in the countries of North Africa and the Middle East (Nagy, 2007; Malecki and Ewers, 2007), since there are currently few studies on this topic.

This study provides the basis for future studies of social interaction in open spaces in non-Western contexts. It is hoped that this research of a Saudi Arabia's unique culture will be useful to other researchers in this important area of multidisciplinary research, with specific attention to open spaces design.

8.4 implications for improved planning and design of public open spaces In line with government plans and actors in decision-making to meet the requirements of users within the Jeddah city context, thus contribute to bring back the social life to those spaces.

Preferences for open spaces have been significantly discussed in previous studies, and previous findings from Western and European countries provide great value for Jeddah and other Middle East cities. Open space users often do not have the chance to share their ideas or needs with decision makers of city planning, and therefore, open spaces often fail to provide the specific needs and perceptions of a variety of users. According to Carroll (2014), there is a need for collaboration between different sectors within the government and the community. Poorly maintained open spaces have been studied by O'Brien & Tabbush (2008), who found that the participants were upset about graffiti and litter, which have been considered to be contributing factors to the aggravation of neglected areas, as well as promoting anti-social behavior. The findings of this research revealed participants' apprehension of poor maintenance of open spaces, such as removing graffiti and litter, and of potential anti-social behavior of users.

The findings of this study can provide valuable insights for urban planners, management personnel, and design professionals, as well as landscape architects, particularly in Saudi Arabia, Middle Eastern, and Arabic countries. The main finding of the study is that the ideas and needs of open spaces users must be considered when making decisions about creating, planning, designing, managing, and maintaining open spaces in order to fairly reflect these ideas and needs. The case studies examined indicate that this is currently lacking: there is little attention to strategic planning regarding the infrastructure of the open space system, as the design of public open space always fails to provide support to a wide range of activities, in conjunction with nonexistent management. More details about the influence of the findings in these areas are shown below, and strategies for dissemination are also identified.

The findings of this study of social interaction in public open spaces have implications for urban planning carried out by Jeddah Municipality, and could also be taken into account by decision-makers in all the cities of Saudi Arabia concerned with planning and urban design. The participants' responses show that there is a need and demand for various open spaces which provide the full range of users' perceptions and expectations. Therefore, open spaces in Jeddah must contain characteristics and opportunities for social, mental, and physical wellbeing, and must bear in mind that use patterns and social interactions are different in both unplanned and designed open spaces, which require an accurate future analysis of the usage patterns in order to inform general strategies of urban planning, designing, and management. For example, urban designers need to deal with the difficulties of access to open spaces.

The current hardscape and softscape elements often fail to meet the needs of the residents to motivate the use of public open spaces in Jeddah, wherefore these findings also have implications for the landscape design of these spaces. To meet users' needs, there are easy and cost-effective solutions, such as creating attractive commercial activities, providing natural or artificial elements of shading, and providing toilets, which are important for all users, especially for children and the elderly. Urban designers should also manage and treat the use of unplanned sites, such as roundabouts and sides of roads and pavements, where people meet for social activities, but face lack of facilities and traffic dangers.

The interview responses also revealed a complaint pattern relating to the poor maintenance of the study sites, such as unpleasant odors, garbage, and damage to site elements which lack repairs. Some immigrant users mentioned that the presence of garbage and damage of site elements are often inflicted by Saudi users who have shown disrespect for the environment, but there are some participants who were of the opinion that the Municipality must be responsible for improving maintenance levels. There are also implications for the management of open spaces in these findings, which currently fail to identify the users' needs. These difficulties could be overcome by increasing funding to achieve the highest quality standards of maintenance, in addition to creating a larger public awareness campaign to improve environmental awareness, thus caring for open spaces

in a better way. Moreover, open spaces managers and decision-makers must make use of residents' participation in the planning stages for the improvement and development of these spaces.

There is a need to deliver these findings to the decision-makers concerned with open spaces in Jeddah and in all the cities of Saudi Arabia and the Gulf Area who need to consult users about their needs and ideas. The researcher will guarantee that the present research findings could be applied in a wide range of professional contexts and has created the following three-point dissemination strategy:

8.4.1 Improving the Educational Agenda of Urban Design to Fully Realize Social Obligations

The findings of this study could help and develop the education and study of urban design within the School of Environmental Designs, where the researcher is working as a lecturer. The pattern of using open spaces in Jeddah, the meanings and attachment that city residents have with open spaces, the value and benefits of open spaces, as well as the planning, designing, and management of open spaces, are all subjects that can enhance the current curriculum. Sponsoring a new generation that has competence and cultural awareness of urban design is the key to providing high-quality designs of open spaces without the need for urban design ideas and practices from the Western culture.

8.4.2 Affecting Policy and Strategic Decision-Making at the National and Local Levels

This study can help to support the decision-making of creating open spaces, i.e., the relevant government and municipal departments, by motivating individuals to present their perceptions and opinions, so that the managers, planners, and urban and landscape designers could meet the expectations and needs of users. The researcher plans to deliver the ideas and findings of this study by presenting his findings to the municipalities and competent government departments, then writing a summary of good practices for publication in professional websites and journals.

8.4.3 Developing the Quality and Potential of Open Space Studies Projects in Saudi Arabia and Middle Eastern Countries

Urban design academics can take many actions to guarantee that designers realize the needs and perceptions of open spaces users. Firstly, the study will be presented in a presentation at the university. Moreover, it will be fundamental to deliver the present study as a paper to peer-reviewed respectable journals in order to guarantee the appropriate 'access' to the findings. The researcher plans to use his position as a lecturer in the Faculty of Environmental Design to develop study programs focused on the social aspect within the Urban Design and Landscape Architecture Department and in specialized conferences, in addition to communicating with academic urban designers in Arab countries. The adopted research methods for this study can also be used as a "toolkit" in future research studies, as they are related to the contexts of Saudi Arabia and the Middle

East. There is a scope to develop and encourage case study-based work in other research programs, potentially developing different projects with diverse sites in different countries.

8.5 Methodological Reflections and Directions for Future Research

This study reflects one point at a time by looking at one city, i.e. Jeddah, in terms of religious and geographical contexts; however this city also possesses the typical urban structure of many cities in Arab countries. The researcher in this study is a Saudi man in his mid-thirties, and, by doing qualitative work of this nature explicitly, situates the research within the research context. This has strengths and limitations which require further reflection. The researcher was unable to access some parts of the community, such as groups or individuals including females and conservative families. Despite making suitable modifications to reach a useful group of participants, the individual-based study structure of the PhD research cannot reach the same size of users that might be reached in a multi-researcher study.

The interviews with the users of open spaces aimed to determine use patterns and social interactions more than public safety issues and the possibility of sexual harassment. It was thought that this could have made interviewees feel uncomfortable. However, a new law passed concerning anti-sexual harassment may detect critical issues, and this could likely highlight the necessity for more studies of this topic. Gender issues could certainly direct future research more explicitly, as they have a considerable impact in Saudi Arabia.

There are significant opportunities to study the environmental planning of the city. This research did not demonstrate specific interest in the environmental planning, climate change, and natural resources of the city. Future studies that incorporate environmental and social dimensions of sustainability can play an important role in examining future scenarios of place change. Currently, there are numerous changes taking place within the democratic process in Saudi Arabia. There is a need to study and realize the implications of the greater democratic participation, and the involvement of people in managing, designing, and planning policies at the country level.

Another potential direction for this study would be to conduct a research project at the regional level, with researchers from Muslim or Arab countries. In particular, it would be useful to experience and refine the typology of open spaces in different contexts across the country. There is also a need to improve comparative research between different countries in order to determine factors that characteristic of Saudi Arabia and Jeddah.

In the process of conducting the present study, the researcher gained valuable knowledge regarding the obstacles, challenges, and principles of studying open space throughout the course of the doctoral program. The researcher also gained practical and scientific experience related to how to conduct a study of open spaces. The methodological approaches were the most important element, since these contributed to gaining greater awareness and understanding of how the study could be

designed to answer the study questions and achieve the research aims. At the personal level, the researcher gained enough confidence to contact the users of open spaces and help them to express their perceptions and needs, and he utilized storytelling methods to promote the sharing of memories in more detail, which would provide valuable knowledge for this study.

In summary, the present study has the potential to make an important contribution to academic research on the value and roles of open space in social life and interaction. The focus on Saudi Arabian open spaces is rare, and contributes to address the Western and North European bias in academic literature. The practical implications of the study are also important, as it highlights the necessity to develop open spaces design, planning, and management in order to better meet residents' social needs. However, despite the numerous weaknesses of the open space provision in Jeddah, the study confirms the potential of creation of strong social relations between the residents of Jeddah when they are provided public spaces that attract them and meet their needs and expectations.

REFERENCES

REFERENCES

- Abbas, M., (2008, September 14), Urban Security: Urban Design from the Point of View of Women City of Nablus as a Case Study, Nablus, Palestine (Arabic)
- Abu-Ghazze, T. (1997). "Vernacular Architecture education in the Islamic society of Saudi Arabia: Towards the development of an authentic contemporary built environment." *Habitat* 21(2): 229-253.
- Adas, Y.A., (2001), Change in identity of Saudis' built environments: The case of Jeddah, Herriot-Watt University, Edinburgh College of Art, Faculty of Environmental Studies, Department of Architecture. Ph.D.
- Akbar, J., (1981), Responsibility and the Traditional Muslim Built Environment, Cambridge, Massachusetts, MIT. PhD.
- Akbar, J. (1988). *Crises in the Built Environment*. Singapore, Concept Media.
- Al-Abdullah, M., (1991), Saudi Outdoor Recreational Needs: A Case Study of Dammam Metropolitan Area unpublished MLA thesis, King Faisal University, Dammam, Saudi Arabia, p. 19
- Alajmi, A., (2001), Factors that support Arab Muslim women in their career roles (Doctoral dissertation), Retrieved from ProQuest Digital Dissertations
- Alderson, P. (2004) *Ethics*. In Fraser, S., Lewis, V., Ding, S. Kellett, M. & Robinson, C. *Doing Research with Children and Young People*. London: Sage.
- Al-Fahad, F., (2008, February 21), Al Jazirah Newspaper, Retrieved November 27, 2014, from Al Jazirah NewsPaper: <http://www.al-jazirah.com/2008/20080221/ln43.htm> (Arabic)
- Al-Gabbani, M. and Alhusein, S., (2005), Residential Centralization of Foreigners in the city of Riyadh: A Study in Characteristics and Distribution, Riyadh, King Abdulaziz City for Science and Technology
- Al-Ghamdi, M.S., (1991), Socio-economic change: Family and fertility in Saudi Arabia, University of Wales. Ph.D.
- Al-Ghamdi, A. (1996). "Deterioration of High-Rise Residential Buildings: The case of the Jeddah Southern Public Housing complex." *Open House International* 21(3): 15-24.
- Alharbi, T., (1989), The development of housing in Jeddah: Changes in built from the traditional to the modern, University of Newcastle Upon Tyne. Ph.D.
- Al-Hathloul, S. (1981). *Tradition, continuity and change in the physical environment*. Mass, M.I.T. PhD.
- Al-Hathloul, S. and Mughal, M., (1999), "Creating identity in new communities: Case studies from Saudi Arabia," *Landscape and Urban Planning* 44(1999): 199-218.
- Al-Hemaidi, W. K. (2001). "The metamorphosis of the urban fabric in an Arab-Muslim city: Riyadh, Saudi Arabia." *Journal of Housing and the Built environment* 16(2001): 179-201.
- Al-Hijji, A.A., (1989), Leisure Behaviour and Recreation Planning in Saudi Arabia: With particular reference to Riyadh: a geographical study, unpublished Ph. D. thesis, University of Exeter.
- Ali Qahis, D., (2008), Al-Riyaadh Economic Newspaper: Volume of 15 billion capitals recorded the names of Saudi businesswomen
- Allan, G., (1985), *Family Life*, New York, Basil Blackwell

- Al-Madhadji, M., (2010), The Importance of Planning Legislation and Standards to Preserve the Urban Environment, *Journal of Science and Technology*, 3-18 (Arabic)
- Al-Musawi, M., (2010, March 21), arabgeographers, Retrieved November 23, 2014, from arabgeographers: <http://www.arabgeographers.net/vb/showthread.php?t=11032> (Arabic)
- Al-Nassan, M., (2008, November 10), Land of Civilizations, Retrieved December 06, 2014, from Land of Civilizations: http://www.landcivi.com/new_page_44.htm (Arabic)
- Al-Nowaiser, M., (1982), The role of traditional and modern residential rural settlements on the quality of environmental experience: a case study of Unyzeh and new Alkabra in Saudi Arabia, Los Angeles, University of Southern California. PhD.
- Al-Nowaiser, M., (1996), "Toward a residential zoning regulation approach for Saudi Arabia," *Journal of Architecture and Planning Research* 13(2): 91-106
- Al-Otabi, A. (2006). Housing Supply and Demand in Northern Jeddah: Preferences and aspirations, University of Newcastle upon Tyne. Ph.D.
- Al-Qiei, T., (1995), Garden Design, Alexandria: Knowledge Facility (Arabic)
- Al-Shahrani, M. (1992). An Inquiry into Leisure and recreation pattern and their relationship to open space and landscape design: The case of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, University of Edinburgh. PhD.
- Al-Sayyad, N.M., (1981), *Streets of Islamic Cairo: A Configuration of Urban Themes and Patterns*, Diss, Massachusetts Institute of Technology
- Alshaya, M., (2005), A sociological study of the attitude of Saudi students in the United States toward women's roles in Saudi Arabia (Doctoral dissertation), Retrieved from ProQuest Digital Dissertations
- Al-Sibai, A., (2013), Saudi Gazette, [Online] Available at: <http://www.saudigazette.com.sa/index.cfm/myfiles/Images/2011/06/14/index.cfm?method=home.regon&contentid=20130923181348> [Accessed 15 March 2014].
- Al-Soliman, T.M., (1990), The Impact of the Surrounding Environment on People's Perception of Major Urban Environmental Attributes, *King Saud University - Architecture and Planning Journal*, 43-60
- Al-Suwaigh, S.A., (1989), "Women in Transition: The Case of Saudi," *Journal of Comparative Family Studies* XX (1)
- Altman, I. and Low, S., (1992), *Place Attachment*, New York: Plenum Press
- Altman, I., (1975), *The Environment and Social Behaviour: Privacy, Personal Space, Territory and Crowding*, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, Elsevier
- Altorki, S., (1991), "Women development and employment in Saudi Arabia: the case of Unayzah," *Journal of Developing Societies* (VII): 96-110
- Alturki, A., (2001), *Attitudes towards designed landscapes in two desert cities: Medina Saudi Arabia and Tucson Arizona*, Thesis, University of Sheffield, Landscape Department, Ph.D. Alwatanalarabi, (2014), [Online] Available at: <http://www.alwatanalarabi.com/news/display/article/44570#.UxtPtY3FJdg> [Accessed Sunday March 2014].

- Al-Zobyadi, A., (2014), Al Riyadh newspaper, [Online] Available at: <http://www.alriyadh.com/903697> [Accessed 15 March 2014].
- Amin, A., (2002), Ethnicity and the multicultural city: living with diversity, University of Durham: Report for the Department of Transport, Local Government, the Regions, the ESRC Cities Initiative
- Armstrong, D., (2000), A survey of community gardens in upstate New York: implications for health promotion and community development, *Health & Place*; 6(4): 319-27
- Aronsson, L., (2004), Place attachment of vacation residents: Between tourists and permanent residents, In C. M. Hall & D. K. Müller (Eds.), *Tourism, mobility and second homes: Between elite landscape and common ground* (pp. 75-86), Clevedon, UK: Channel View
- Ashworth, G., (1984), *Recreation and Tourism* (London: Bell & Hyman Limited) p. 184
- Atfah, N., (2013), Landscape concept and application in planning studies: Syria countryside case study, *Journal of Science and Engineering*, 489-509 (Arabic)
- Aziz-Alrahman, H. (1985). *Review and Analysis of Land Use Regulations in Jeddah, Saudi Arabia*. Cardiff, University of Wales. M.S. thesis.
- Badr, M., (1992), *Landscaping and beautifying cities and villages*, Alexandria: Knowledge facility (Arabic)
- Bahammam, O., (1995), *The Social Needs of the Users in Public Open Space: The Involvement of Socio-Cultural Aspects in Landscape Design of the Outdoor Urban Environment in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia*, unpublished Ph. D. Thesis, University of Edinburgh, Scotland
- Ball, M. and Smith, G., (1992), *Analysing Visual Data*, Qualitative Research Method Series 24, London: Sage
- Banerjee, T. and Loukaitou-Sideris, (1992), "Private Production of Downtown Public Open Space: Experience of Los Angeles and San Francisco," study of urban and regional planning
- Banister, P., Burman, E. and Parker, I., (1997), *Qualitative Methods in Psychology: A Research Guide*, Milton Keynes: Open University Press
- Banister, P., Burman, E., Parker, I., Taylor, M. & Tindall, C., (1994), *Qualitative Methods in Psychology: A Research Guide*, Philadelphia: Open University
- Barker, R.G., (1968), *Ecological psychology: Concepts and methods for studying the environment of human behaviour*, Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press
- Bazeley, P., (2007), *Qualitative Data Analysis with NVIVO*, second edition, London: Sage
- Bedimo-Rung, A.L., Mowen, A. and Cohen, D., (2005), 'The significance of parks to physical activity and public health: A conceptual model ', *American Journal of Preventative Medicine*, 28, 2s2, p 159-168
- Behrendt, C., Hag, T. et al., (2009), *Crises Impact on Arab States: Consideration on employment and social protection policy responses*, Geneva, International Institute for Labor Studies, ILO
- Bell, J., (1993), *Doing your research project*, Open University Press, Buckingham, Second Edition
- Bell, S., Ward Thompson, C. and Travlou, P., (2003), Contested views of freedom and control: children, teenagers and urban fringe woodlands in central Scotland, *Urban Forestry and Urban Greening* 2, 87–100

- Bentley, M. (1983). *Adaptive Reuse: Integrating Traditional Areas into the Modern Urban Fabric*. Cambridge, Mass MIT Laboratory of Architecture and Planning.
- Berger, P. L. and T. Luckmann (1967). *The Social Construction of Reality*. Garden City, New York, Doubleday-Anchor.
- Berry, J., (2008), "Globalization and acculturation," *International Journal of Intercultural Relations* 32(4): 328-336
- Blaxter, L., Hughes, C. & Tight, M., (1996), *How to Research*, Bristol
- Bokhari, A., (1978), *Jeddah: A study in urban formation*, University of Pennsylvania, PhD.
- Bokhari, A., Ed. (1983). *Conservation in the Historic District of Jeddah*. In *Adaptive Reuse: Integrating Traditional Areas into the Modern Urban Fabric*, Cambridge. Mass, MIT Laboratory of Architecture and Planning. The Aga Khan Program for Islamic Architecture.
- Bonaiuto, M., Aiello, A., Perugini, M., Bonnes, M. and Ercolani, A.P., (1999), Multidimensional perception of residential environment quality and neighbourhood attachment in the urban environment, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 19, 331-352
- Bonaiuto, M., Fornara, F. & Bonnes, M., (2006), Perceived residential environment quality in middle- and low-extension Italian cities, *European Review of Applied Psychology*, 23-34
- Bonnes, T.L. & Bonaiuto, M., (2003), Psychological theories for environmental issues (pp. 137–170), Hants: Ashgate
- Bourdieu, P., (1984), *Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgment of Taste*, Harvard University Press
- Bourdieu, P., (1985), The forms of capital, In *Handbook of theory and research for the sociology of education*, edited by John Richardson, 241– 58, New York: Greenwood
- Bricker, K. S., & Kerstetter, D. L. (2000). Level of specialization and place attachment: An exploratory study of white water recreationists. *Leisure Sciences*, 22, 233-257.
- Britannica Encyclopaedia, (2005), "hypothetico-deductive method" *Britannica Encyclopaedia* [Online], 14 May <http://www.britannica.com/eb/article-9041832> [accessed 14/May/2011]
- Brown, B., Perkins, D.D. & Brown, G., (2003), Place attachment in a revitalizing neighbourhood: Individual and block levels of analysis, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 23, 259–271
- Brown, B.B., (1987), Territoriality, P. 505–531 *in Handbook of environmental psychology*, Stokols, D., and I. Altman (eds.), Wiley, New York
- Bryman, A., (2004), *Social Research Methods*, second edition, Oxford: Oxford University Press
- Buanaqh, S., (2009, March 14), *Public Parks in the Urban Environment Al-ksentinih*, Retrieved December 12, 2014, from University of Mentouri: <http://bu.umc.edu.dz/theses/sociologie/ABOH2970.pdf> (Arabic)
- Bunce, M., (1994), *The Countryside Ideal: Anglo-American Images of Landscape*, London: Routledge
- Burgess, J., (1995), *Growing in Confidence: Understanding People's Perceptions of Urban Fringe woodlands*, Northampton: Countryside Commission
- Burgess, J., Harrison, C. and Limb, M., (1988), 'People, parks and the urban green: A study of

- popular meanings and values for open spaces in the city', *Urban Studies*, 2S, p455-473
- Buttimer, A. and Seamon, D., (EDS.), (1980), *The human experience of space and place*, Croom Helm, Ltd., London, 201 p
- Buttimer, A., (1980), Home, reach, and the sense of place, In A. Buttimer, & D. Seamon (Eds.), *The human experience of space and place*, New York: St. Martin's Press
- Campbell, A., Converse, P. & Rodgers, W., (1976), *The quality of American life*, New York: Russell Sage
- Cantrill, J.C., (1998), The environment, self and a sense of place: Communicative foundations for regional ecosystem management, *J. Appl. Comm. Res.* 26:301–318
- Carmona M., Heath, T., Oc T. & Tiesdell, S., (2003), *Public Places - Urban Spaces: The Dimensions of Urban Design*, Oxford: Architectural Press
- Carmona, M. and C. De-Magalhaes (2006). "Public space management: Present and potential." *Journal of Environmental Planning and Management* 49(1): 75-99.
- Carmona, M., C. de-Magalhaes, et al. (2008). *Public Space: The management dimension*. London, Routledge.
- Carmona, M., (2010), *Public places, urban spaces: the dimensions of urban design*, Amsterdam Boston: Architectural Press/Elsevier
- Carmona, M., Tiesdell, S., Heath, T. & Oc, T., (2010), *Public Places Urban Spaces, Second Edition: The Dimensions of Urban Design*, Amsterdam: Architectural Press
- Carr, S., (1992), *Public Space*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press
- Carr, S., Francis, M., Rivlin, L.G. & Stone, A., (1992), *Public space*, Cambridge Univ. Press
- Carroll, L., (2014), WHO: Lack of exercise in UAE a key disease factor, [Online] Available at: <http://www.thenational.ae/uae/health/who-lack-of-exercise-in-uae-a-key-disease-factor> [Accessed 20 June 2014].
- Carruthers, J. a. U., G. (2002). "Fragmentation and sprawl: evidence from interregional analysis." *Growth Change* 33: 312-340.
- Cattell, V., Dines, N., Gesler, W. & Curtis, S., (2008), Mingling, observing, and lingering: everyday public spaces and their implications for well-being and social relations, *Health & Place*, 14, 544e561
- CDS, (1992), *National Population Census 1992*, Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, Central Department of Statistics, Ministry of Finance
- CDS, (2004), *Detailed Results Population & Housing Census 1425 H (2004)*, Riyadh, Central Department of Statistic & Information, Ministry of Economy and Planning
- CDS, (2007), *General Census of Population and Housing for the year 2007*, Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, Central Department of Statistic and Information, Ministry of Economy and Planning
- CDS, (2010), *The preliminary results of General Census of Population and Housing for the year 2010*, Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, Central Department of Statistic and Information, Ministry of Economy and Planning
- Chiesura, A., (2004), 'The role of urban parks for the sustainable city', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 68, p129-138

- Child, M.C., (2004), *Squares: A public place design guide for urbanists, USA*, University of New Mexico Press
- Chow, K. and Healey, M., (2008), *Place Attachment and Place Identity: First-Year Undergraduates Making the Transition from Home to University*, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 28 (4) 362-372
- Clawson, M. and Knetsch, J., (1966), *Economic of Outdoor Recreation* (Baltimore: The Johns Hopkins Press), p.12
- Clayton, S.D., (2003), *"Identity and the natural environment: the psychological significance of nature"*, MIT Press, Cambridge, MA, 353 pp
- Cohen, D.A. et al., (2008), *The built environment and collective efficacy*, *Health & Place*, 14 (2), 198-208
- Coles, R. and Bussey, S., (2000), *'Short communication - Urban forest landscapes in the UK progressing the social agenda'*, *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 52, p181-188
- Coley, R., Kuo, F. and Sullivan, W., (1997), *'Where does community grow? The social context created by nature in urban public housing'*, *Environment & Behavior*, 29, 4, 468 -494
- Cooper, A.R., Andersen, L.B., Wedderkopp, N., Page, A.S. and Froberg, K., (2005), *Physical Activity Levels of Children Who Walk, Cycle, or Driven to School*, *American Journal of Preventive Medicine*, 29(3), 179-184
- Cranz, G., (1982), *The Politics of Park Design: A History of Urban Parks in America*, (USA: The MIT Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts) p254
- Crow, G. and Mab, A., (2011), *Conceptualisations and meanings of community: the theory and operationalisation of a contested concept*, AHRC paper online, Swindon, AHRC Connected Communities
- Cuba, L. & Hummon, D.M., (1993), *Constructing a sense of home: Place affiliation and-migration across the life cycle*, *Sociological Forum*, 8, 547–572
- Cullen, G., (1961), *The Concise Townscape*, New York, Von Nostrand Reinhold
- Curson, T. and Kitts, C., (2000), *'Women's use and perceptions of the outdoors: A case study of urban parks'*, in Humberstone, B (eds) *Her Outdoors: Risk, Challenge and Adventure in Gendered Open Spaces*, Hove: Leisure Studies Association
- Curtis, S., Gesler, W., Smith, W. and Washburn, S., (2000), *'Approaches to Sampling and Case Selection in Qualitative Research: Examples in the Geography of Health'*, *Social Science and Medicine*, 50, 7-8, pp 1001 - 1014
- Cybriwsky, R., (1999), *"Changing Patterns of Urban Public Space: Observations and Assessments from the Tokyo and New York Metropolitan Areas,"* 223-231
- Daghistani, A. (1991). *"Urban growth management in Jeddah."* *Planning Outlook* 34(1).
- Daghistani, A. (1993). *A Case Study in Planning Implementation*, Working Paper No. 32, University of Newcastle upon Tyne.
- De Vaus, D., (1993), *Surveys in Social Research*, third edition, London: UCL Press
- De Vaus, D., (2001), *Research Design in Social Research*, London, Sage Publication
- Degen, M. and Rose, G., (2012), *The Sensory Experiencing of Urban Design: The Role of Walking*

and Perceptual Memory, *Urban Studies*, 49(15) 3271–3287

-De-Magalhaes, C. and Carmona, M., (2009), "Dimensions and models of contemporary public space management in England," *Journal of Environmental Planning and Management* 52(1): 2009

-De-Magalhaes, C. and M. Carmona (2009). "Dimensions and models of contemporary public space management in England." *Journal of Environmental Planning and Management* 52(1): 2009.

-Denscombe, M., (1998), *The Good Research Guide: For Small Scale Research Projects*, Buckingham: Oxford University Press

-Devine-Wright, P. & Lyons, E., (1997), Remembering pasts and representing places: The construction of national identities in Ireland, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 17, 33–45

-Dines N., Cattell V., Gesler W. and Curtis S., (2006), *Public spaces, social relations and well-being in East London*: Joseph Rowntree Foundation

-Dixon, J. & Durrheim, K., (2000), Displacing place-identity: A discursive approach to locating self and other, *British Journal of Social Psychology*, 39, 27-44

-Dixon, J., (2004), Dislocating identity: segregation and the transformation of place, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, 455-473

-Duerden, M.D. & Witt, P.A., (2010), "The Impact of Socialization on Youth Program Outcomes: A Social Development Model Perspective", *Leisure Sciences*, vol. 32, no. 4, pp. 299-317

-Duncan, M. and Mummery, K., (2005), 'Psychosocial and environmental factors associated with physical activity among city dwellers in regional Queensland', *Preventative Medicine*, 40, p363 -372

-Dunnett, N., Swanwick, C. & Woolley, H., (2002), *Improving urban parks, play areas and green spaces* : May 2002, London: Dept. for Transport, Local Government and the Regions,

-Eben Saleh, M.A., (1998), Place Identity: The Visual Image of Saudi Arabian Cities, *Habitat International*, 149-164

-Eben-Saleh, M., (1997), "Privacy and communal socialization: The role of space in the security of traditional and contemporary neighbourhoods in Saudi Arabia," *Habitat International* 21(2): 167-184

-Eben-Saleh, M. (2001). "The evolution of planning & urban theory from the perspective of vernacular design: MOMRA initiatives in improving Saudi Arabian neighbourhoods " *Land Use Policy* 18(2): 179-190.

-Eben-Saleh, M., (2002), "The transformation of residential neighbourhood: The emergence of new urbanism in Saudi Arabian culture," *Building and Environment* 37: 515-529

-Eckbo, G., (1969), *The Landscape that We See*, New York; McGraw-Hill

-Edensor, T., (2000), 'Walking in the British countryside: Reflexivity, embodied practices and ways to escape' , *Body and Society*, 6, p81-106

-Efroymsen, D., Thanh Ha, T.T. & Thu Ha, P., (2009), *Public Spaces: How They Humanize Cities*, Dhaka: HealthBridge - WBB Trust

-Eisenhauer, B.W., Krannich, R.S. and Blahna, D.J., (2000), Attachment to special places on public lands: An analysis of activities, reason for attachments and community connections, *Society and Natural Resources*, 12: 421-441

-Ellaway, A., Macintyre, S. and Bonnefoy, X., (2005), Graffiti, greenery, and obesity in adults:

- secondary analysis of European cross-sectional survey, *British Medical Journal*, 331:611-2
- Ellis, C., Lee, S. & Kweon, B., (2006), 'Retail land use, neighbourhood satisfaction and the urban forest: an investigation into the moderating and mediating effects of trees and shrubs', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 74, p70-86
- Englander, D., (2001), *New York's community gardens – A resource at risk*, New York: Neil A. McConnell Foundation
- Esses, V., Wagner, U. et al., (2006), "Perceptions of national identity and attitudes toward immigrants and immigration in Canada and Germany," *International Journal of Intercultural Relations* 30(2006): 635-669
- Eyles, J. and Litva, A., (1998), Place, participation and policy: people in and for health care policy, In: Kearns, R.A., Gesler, W.M. (Eds.), *Putting Health into Place: Landscape, Identity and Well-being*, Syracuse University Press, Syracuse, New York, pp. 248–269
- Faber Taylor, A. Kuo, F. and Sullivan, W., (2001), 'Coping with ADD: The surprising connection to green play settings', *Environment and Behaviour*, 33, p54
- Faber Taylor, A., Wiley, A., Kuo, F. and Sullivan, W., (1998), 'Growing up in the inner city: Green spaces as places to grow', *Environment and Behavior*, 1, p3-27
- Fadan, Y. (1977). *Urban Dwelling Environments: Jeddah, Saudi Arabia*. Cambridge, Massachusetts, MIT Press.
- Fakeeh, M.S., (2009), *Saudization as a solution for unemployment: The case of Jeddah western region*, University of Glasgow, Ph.D.
- Farsi, H., (1991), *Jeddah, city of art: the sculptures and monuments*, London: Stacey International
- Farsi, M.A., (1984), "Beautification of the Jeddah Corniche" in: Municipality of Jeddah Ministry of Municipal and Rural Affairs, Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, *Training Seminar for Engineers: 13 the to 15 the February 1984* (Tudhoe: Ma Donald Press Ltd.) Centre for Middle Eastern and Islamic Studies, University of Durham, pp. 60-70
- Fe'lonneau, M.L., (2004), Love and loathing of the city: Urbanophilia and urbanophobia, topological identity and perceived incivilities, *Environmental Psychology*, 24(1), 43–52
- Feldman, R.M., (1990), Settlement identity: psychological bonds with home places in a mobile society, *Environment and Behavior*, 22, 183–229
- Ferre´, M., Guitart, A. and Ferret, M., (2006), Children and playgrounds in Mediterranean cities, *Children's Geographies* 4, 173–183
- Ferreira, I., Van Der Horst, K., Wendel-Vos, W., Kremers, S., Van Lenthe, F. J. & Brug, J., (2007), Environmental correlates of physical activity in youth, A review and update, *Obesity Reviews*, 8, 129-154
- Florgard, C. and Forsberg, O., (2006), 'Residents' use of remnant natural vegetation in the residential area of Jarvafaltet, Stockholm', *Urban Forestry & Urban Greening*, 5, p83 92
- Frances, E.K. et al., (1998), Fertile ground for community: Inner-city neighbourhood common spaces, *American J of Community Psychology*, 26 (6), 823
- Francis, M., (2001), A case study method for landscape architecture, *Landscape Journal* 20 (1): 15–

- Frank, L.D. and Engelke, P.O., (2001), The built environment and human activity patterns: exploring the impacts of urban form on public health, *Journal of Planning Literature* 16, 202–218
- Fredrickson, L. and Anderson, D., (1999), 'A qualitative exploration of the wilderness experience as a source of spiritual inspiration', *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 19. p21-39
- Fried, M., (1963), "Grieving for a lost home" in *The urban condition: People and policy in the metropolis*, ed. L.J. Duhl, Simon & Schuster, New York, pp. 124-152
- Fried, M., (1982), Residential attachment: Sources of residential and community satisfaction, *Journal of Social Issues*, 38, 107-119
- Friedrichs, J. and Jagodzinski, W., (1999), 'Theorien sozialer Integration', in: J. Friedrichs and W. Jagodzinski (eds) *Soziale Integration*, Opladen: Westdeutscher Verlag, 9-43, (translated to English)
- Friedrichs, J. and Jagodzinski, W., (1999), *Soziale Integration*, In: Friedrichs, J., Jagodzinski, W. (Eds.), *Theorien sozialer Integration*, Westdeutscher Verlag, Opladen/Wiesbaden, pp. 9–43
- Frumkin, H., (2003), 'Healthy places: Exploring the evidence', *American Journal of Public Health*, 93,9, p1451-1456
- Fullilove, M.T., (1996), Psychiatric implications of displacement: Contributions from the psychology of place, *American Journal of Psychiatry*, 153, 1516-1523
- Gallion, A. and Eisner, B., (1980), *The Urban Pattern: City Planning and Design*, 5th edit., (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Company), p. 309
- Gehl, J., (1987), *Life Between Buildings: Using Public Spaces*, (New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold), pp. 135-140
- Gibson, J.J., (1977), "The Theory of Affordances", in *Perceiving, Acting, and Knowing: Toward an Ecological Psychology*, Shaw, R. & Bransford, J. edition, Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Hillsdale, NJ, pp. 67-82
- Gibson, J.J., (1979), *The Ecological Approach to Visual Perception*, Houghton Mifflin, Boston
- Gies, E., (2006), *The Health Benefits of Parks: How Parks Help Keep Americans and Their Communities Fit and Healthy*, The Trust for Public Land
- Gifford, R., (2009), "Environmental psychology: Manifold visions, unity of purpose", *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, vol. 29, no. 3, pp. 387-389
- Giles-Corti et al., (2005), Increasing walking: how important is distance to, attractiveness and size of public open space? *American Journal of Preventive Medicine*, 28 (2 suppl 2), 169-176
- Giles-Corti, B. and Donovan, R., (2002), 'Socioeconomic status differences in recreational physical activity levels and real and perceived access to a supportive physical environment', *Preventative Medicine*, 35, p601-611
- Giles-Corti, B. and Donovan, R., (2003), 'Relative influences of individual, social environmental, and physical environmental correlates of walking', *American Journal of Public Health*, 93, 9, p1583 -1589
- Giles-Corti, B., Broomhall, M., Knuiaman, M., Collins, C., Douglas, K., Ng, K., Lange, A. and Donovan, R., (2005), 'Increasing walking: how important is distance to, attractiveness and size of public open space?' *American Journal of Preventative Medicine*, 28, 2s2, p169-176

- Gillham, B., (2000), *Case Study Research Methods*, London, Continuum Cassell
- Giuliani, M.V. and Feldman, R., (1993), Place attachment in a developmental and cultural context, *J. Environ, Psych.* 13:267–274
- Giuliani, M.V., (2003), Theory of attachment and place attachment, In M.
- Gold, S.M., (1980), *Recreation Planning and Design*, (New York: McGraw-Hill BookCompany), p. 152
- Gooch, M., (2003), A sense of place: Ecological identity as a driver for catchment volunteering, *Australian Journal on Volunteering*, 8(2), 23-32
- Gorman, G.E. and Clayton, P., (2005), *Qualitative Research for the Information Professionals*, London: Facet Publishing
- Goudy, W.J., (1982), Further Consideration of Indicators of Community Attachment, *Social Indicators Research*, 1982, 11: 181-192
- Grahn, P & Stigsdotter, U., (2003), *Landscape Planning and Stress*, Urban Forestry & Urban --- Greening Vol 2, pp 1-18, Urban & Fischer Verlag, Jena
- Greenhalgh, L. and Wolpole, K., (1996), *People, Parks and Cities: A Guide to Current Good Practice in Urban Parks: A Report for the Department of the Environment*, London: HMSO
- Greeno, J.G., (1994), "Gibson's affordances", *Psychological review*, vol. 101, no. 2, p. 336
- Greenspace Scotland, (2008), *Health Impact Assessment of greenspace: A Guide*
- Greider, T. and Garkovich, L., (1994), Landscapes: The social construction of nature and the environment, *Rural Soc.* 59:1–24
- Griffin, S., Wilson, D., Wilcox, S., Buck, J. and Ainsworth, B., (2008), Physical activity influences in a disadvantaged African American community and the communities' proposed solutions, *Health Promotion Practice* 9, 180–190
- Guardia, J. & Pol, E., (2002), A critical study of theoretical models of sustainability through structural equation systems, *Environment and Behaviour*, 34, 137–149
- Guimond, S., Oliveira, P.D. et al., (2010), "The trouble with assimilation: Social dominance and the emergence of hostility against immigrants, " *International Journal of Intercultural Relations* 34(6): 642-650
- Guite, H.F., Clark, C. & Ackrill, G., (2006), The impact of the physical and urban environment on mental well-being, *Public Health*, 120, 1117-1126
- Gupta, A. and Ferguson, J., (Eds.), (1997), *Culture, power, place: Explorations in critical anthropology*, Duke University Press, Durham, NC. 357 p
- Gustafson, P., (2001), Roots and routes: Exploring the relationship between place attachment and mobility, *Environment and Behaviour*, 33, 667–686
- Gustafson, P., (2002), Tourism and seasonal retirement migration, *Annals of Tourism Research*, 29(4), 899-918
- Gustafson, P., (2009), More cosmopolitan, no less local, *European Societies*, 25-47
- Hammadi, T., (1989), "The Recreational Pattern of the Islamic person and its importance for planning and design of outdoor recreational provisions, in: A1-Talib, a quarterly magazine issued by the Saudi

Students' Clubs, concerning summaries of their academic work and theses, London, No. 1, the 9th circle, December 1989, pp. 9-11

-Hammadi, T.H., (1993), Outdoor recreation and leisure patterns in Saudi Arabia and their roles in determining open space planning and design: the case of Jeddah's Corniche, University of Sheffield, architectural studies, department of Landscape, Ph.D.

-Hammit, W.E., Backlund, E. A. & Bixler, R.D., (2006), Place bonding for recreation places: Conceptual and empirical development, *Leisure Studies*, 17-41

-Hansmann, R., Hug, S.-M. & Seeland, K., (2007), Restoration and stress relief through physical activities, *Urban Forestry & Urban Greening* 6, 213–225

-Hardman, A. and Hudson, A., (1989), 'Walking for Health -a closer look at exercise', *Health Trends*, 21, 91-92

-Harris, P.B., Werner, C.M., Brown, B.B. & Ingebritsen, D., (1995), Relocation and privacy regulation: A cross-cultural analysis, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 15, 311–320

-Hay, R., (1998), Sense of place in developmental context, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 18, 5–29

-Hayden, D., (1997), *The power of place, Urban landscapes as public history*, Cambridge, MA: MIT Press

-Heckscher, A. and Robinson, P., (1977), *Open space: The life of American cities*, Harper and Row Publisher, New York

-Heidegger, M., (1962), *Being and time*, New York: Harper & Row

-Henderson, K., Neff, L., Shape, P., Greaney, M., Royce, S. and Ainsworth, B., (2001), "It Takes a Village" to promote physical activity: the potential for public park and recreation departments, *Journal of Park and Recreation Administration* 19, 23–41

-Hendon, W., (1981), *Evaluating Urban Parks and Recreation*, (Connecticut: Praeger Publishers Division of Greenwood Press, Inc.), USA

-Hernandez, B., Hidalgo, M.C., Salazar-Laplace, M.E. and Hess, S., (2007), Place attachment and place identity in natives and non-natives, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 27, 310-319

-Herting, J.R. & Guest, A.M., (1985), Components of satisfaction with local areas in the metropolis, *Sociological Quarterly*, 26, 99-115

-Hidalgo, M.C. and Hernandez, B., (2001), Place attachment: Conceptual and empirical questions, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 21, 273-281

-Hillsdon, M. Panter, J. Foster, C. and Jones, A., (2007), 'The relationship between access and quality of urban green space with population physical activity', *Public Health*, 120, 12, P11271132

-Hirzalla, E., (2014, January 21), *Open Urban Spaces Development Strategies: Gaza City as a Case Study*, Gaza, Gaza, Palestine (Arabic)

-Hou, J., (ed.), (2013), *Transcultural Cities: Border-Crossing and Placemaking*, London and New York: Routledge

-Hough, M., (1990), *Out of Place: Restoring Identity to the Regional Landscape*, New Haven: Yale University Press

- Humaidan, M. (4 December 2009). Official death toll in Jeddah flood placed at 109. Arab News. Jeddah.
- Hummon, D., (1992), Community attachment: Local sentiment and sense of place, In S. M. Low & I. Altman (Eds.), *Place attachment* (pp. 253-278), New York: Plenum Press
- Hunziker, M., Buchecker, M. and Hartig, T., (2007), Space and Place – two aspects of human-landscape relationship, cited in Kienast, Ghosh and Wildi, *A Changing World, Challenges for landscape research*, pp 47-62, Dordrecht, Springer
- Hussain, G., Nadeem, M., Younis, A, Raiz, A., Khan, M.A. and Naveed, S., (2010), Impact of Public Parks on Human Life: a Case Study, *Pak. J. Agri. Sci.*, 47(3): 225-230
- Ilahi, N., (2010), "Gendered Contestations: An Analysis of Street Harassment in Cairo and its Implications for Women's Access to Public Space'," Master's thesis in sociology, American University in Cairo (2010)
- Jackson, L. e. (2003). "The relationship of urban design to human health and condition." *Landscape and Urban Planning* 64(2003): 191-200.
- Jacobs, J. (1961). *The Death and Life of Great American Cities*. New York. , Random House.
- Jacobson-Widding, A., (1983), *Identity: Personal and socio-cultural*, A Symposium, Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Uppsaliensis
- Jeddah-Municipality, (2004), *Jeddah Structure Plan*, Jeddah Municipality, Saudi Arabia
- Jeddah-Municipality, (2006), *Jeddah Local Plan*, Jeddah Municipality, Saudi Arabia
- Jeddah-Municipality, (2010), *Jeddah Local Plan*, Jeddah Municipality, Saudi Arabia
- Jeddah-Municipality, (2012), *Jeddah Local Plan*, Jeddah Municipality, Saudi Arabia
- Jenaideb, A. (1993). *Dwellings and dwellers of a contemporary Madinah*, University of Strathclyde. PhD.
- Jorgensen, A. Hitchmough, J. and Calvert, T., (2002), 'Woodland spaces and their edges: their impact on perception of safety and preference', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 60, p135-150
- Jorgensen, A., Hitchmough, J. and Dunnett, N., (2007), 'Woodland as a setting for housing appreciation and fear and the contribution to residential satisfaction and place identity in Warrington New Town, UK', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 79,3-4, pp. 273-287
- Jorgensen, B.S. & Stedman, R.C., (2001), Sense of place as an attitude: Lakeshore owners attitudes toward their properties, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 21, 233–248
- Kaltenborn, B. P. & Williams, D. R., (2002), The meaning of place: attachments to Femundsmarka National Park, Norway, among tourists and locals, *Norsk Geo- grafisk Tidsskrift* , 189-198
- Kaltenborn, B.P., (1997), Recreation homes in natural settings: Factors affecting place attachment, *Nor. J. Geogr*, 51:187–198
- Kaplan, R. and Kaplan, S., (1989), *The Experience of Nature: a Psychological Perspective*, New York: Cambridge University Press
- Kaplan, R., (1993), 'The role of nature in the context of the workplace', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 26,p193-201
- Kaplan, R., (2001), 'The nature of the view from home: psychological benefits', *Environment &*

Behaviour, 33, 4, p507 -542

- Kaplan, S., (1995), 'The restorative benefits of nature: Toward an integrative framework', *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 15, p169-182
- Kattan, S.M., (1991), *Women's work in Saudi Arabia: An analysis of tradition and change*, University of London, Ph.D.
- Kawachi, I. Kennedy, B.P., Lochner, K. & Prothrow-Stith, D., (1997), Social capital, income inequality and mortality, *American Journal of Public Health*, 87(9), 1491-1498
- Keane, C., (1997), 'Evaluating the influence of fear of crime as an environmental mobility restrictor on women's routine activities', *Environment & Behaviour*, 30, 1, p60-74
- Khalifa, H.K., (2001), *Changing childhood in Saudi Arabia: A historical comparative study of three female Generations*, Ph.D. Hull, University of Hull
- Khalil, A., (1994), *Muslim Cities as a Pattern of Relationships: House-mosque relationship*, UK, University of Edinburgh, PhD.
- Kirby, A. (2008). "The production of private space and its implications for urban social relations." *Political Geography* 27(2008): 74-95.
- Kirtland, K., Porter, D., Addy, C., Neet, M., Williams, J., Sharpe, P., Neff, L., Dexter Kimsey, C. and Ainsworth, B., (2003), 'Environmental measures of physical activity supports: perception versus reality', *American Journal of Preventative Medicine*, 24, 4, p323-331
- Knez, I., (2005), Attachment and identity as related to a place and its perceived climate, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 25, 207-281
- Kohr, H.-U. & Martini, M., (1992), Local, regional, national or transnational? Psycho-political speculations and exploratory data on the attachments of German and Italian students, *Ricerche di Psicologia*, 4, 65–82
- Korpela, K., (1989), Place-identity as a product of environmental self-regulation, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 9, 241-256
- Korpela, K.M., (1992), Adolescents' favourite places and environmental self-regulation, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 3, 249–258
- Korpela, K.M., Hartig, T., Kaiser, F. and Fuhrer, U., (2001), Restorative experience and self-regulation in favourite places, *Environment and Behavior*, 33, 572–589
- Krenichyn, K., (2004), 'Women and physical activity in an urban park: enrichment and support through an ethic of care', *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, p117-130
- Krenichyn, K., (2006), 'The only place to go and be in the city': women talk about exercise, being outdoors, and the meanings of a large open park', *Health & Place*, 12, p631-643
- Kunstler, J. (1993). *The Geography of Nowhere*. New York, Simon & Shuster.
- Kuo, F. and Sullivan, W., (2001), 'Aggression and violence in the inner city: effects of environment via mental fatigue', *Environment and Behaviour*, 33, 4, p543 -571
- Kuo, F., Bacaicoa, M. and Sullivan, W., (1998), 'Transforming inner-city landscapes: trees, sense of safety and preference', *Environment & Behaviour*, 30, 1, p28-59
- Kuzel, A.J., (1992), Sampling in Qualitative Inquiry, In: B. F. Crabtree & W. L. Miller (eds.), *Doing*

Qualitative Research, Research Methods for Primary Care, Vol. 3., Newbury Park, CA: Sage, pp. 31–44

-Kvale, S. and Brinkmann, S., (2009), Interviews: Learning the Craft of Qualitative Research Interviewing, second edition, California: Thousand Oaks

-Kweon, B., Sullivan, W. and Wiley, A., (1998), 'Green common spaces and the social integration of inner city older adults', *Environment & Behaviour*, 30, 6, p832-858

-Kyle, G., Graefe, A., Manning, R. & Bacon, J., (2004a), Effects of place attachment on users' perceptions of social and environmental conditions in a natural setting, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, 213–225

-Kyle, G.T., Mowen, A.J. & Tarrant, M., (2004b), Linking place preferences with place meaning: An examination of the relationship between place motivation and place attachment, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, 439-454

-Kytä, M., (2002), "Affordances of children's environments in the context of cities, small towns, suburbs and rural villages in Finland and Belarus", *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, vol. 22, no. 1-2, pp.109-123

-Kytä, M., (2004a), "Children in outdoor contexts: Affordances and independent mobility in the assessment of environmental child friendliness", ProQuest Dissertations and Theses

-Kytä, M., (2004b), "The extent of children's independent mobility and the number of actualized affordances as criteria for child-friendly environments", *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, vol. 24, no. 2, pp. 179-179

-Laavanya, K., (2013), 'Friendship and the urban encounter: towards a research agenda', Max Planck Institute for the Study of Religious and Ethnic Diversity, paper 13-10

-Laczko, L.S., (2005), National and local attachments in a changing world system: Evidence from an international survey, *International Review of Sociology*, 517-528

-Lee, T., (2001), *Perceptions, Attitudes and Preferences in Forests and Woodlands*, Technical Paper, 18, Edinburgh: Forestry Commission

-Lemerick, P.N. and Southall, T.W., (1992), *Revealing Territory: Photographs of the Southwest* by Mark Klett, Albuquerque: University of New Mexico

-Lerner, J.S. & Keltner, D., (1999), How much risk can you handle? Testing the appraisal - tendency hypothesis with fearful, angry, and happy people, Manuscript submitted for publication

-Lewicka, M., (2005), Ways to make people active: Role of place attachment, cultural capital and neighbourhood ties, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 381-395

-Lewicka, M., (2008), Place attachment, place identity and place memory: Restoring the forgotten city past, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 28, 209-231

-Lewicka, M., (2010), What makes neighbourhood different from home and city? Effects of place scale on place attachment, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 35-51

-Lewicka, M., (2011), Place Attachment: How Far Have We Come in the Last 40 Years? *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 207-230

-Lewis, C.A., (1996), *Green Nature/Human Nature: The Meaning of Plants in our Lives*, Urbana and

Chicago: University of Illinois Press

- Lin, J. and Mele, C., (2005), *The Urban Sociology Reader*, Oxon: Routledge, Literature, 20, 335-350
- Litwak, E., (1965), *Extended Kin Relations in an Industrial Democratic Society*, Social Structure and the Family: generational Relations, E. Shanas and G. F. Streib, Englewood Cliffs, Prentice-Hall
- Llewellyn, D., (1992), London Planning Advisory Committee and environment trust Associates Ltd, *Open Space Planning in London*, Romford: LPAC
- Lloyd, K., Burden, J. and Kieva, J., (2008), Young girls and urban parks: planning for transition through adolescence, *Journal of Park and Recreation Administration* 26, 21–38
- Lofland, L., (1998), *The Public Realm: Exploring the City's Quintessence Social Territory*: New York: Aldine De Gruyter
- Longo, G., (1996), *Great American Public Places*, New York: Urban Initiatives
- Loukaitou-Sideris, A., (1995), "Urban Form and Social Context: Cultural Differentiation in Uses of Urban Parks," *Journal of Planning Education and Research* (1995): 89-102
- Low, S.M., (1992), Symbolic ties that bind, Place attachment in the plaza, In I. Altman, & S. M. Low (Eds.), *Place attachment* (pp. 165–185)
- Low, S.M., (2000), *On the Plaza: The politics of public space and culture*, Texas University of Texas Press.
- Lynch, K., (1960), *The Image of the City*, Cambridge, Mass: Technology Press
- Maas, J., Verheij, R.A., de Vries, S., Spreeuwenberg, P., Schellevis, F.G. & Groenewegen, P.P., (2009), Morbidity is related to a green living environment, *Journal of Epidemiological Community Health*, 63, 967-973
- Macnaghten, P. & Urry, J., (2000), 'Bodies in the woods', *Body and Society*, 6, 3-4, p166-182
- Macnaghten, P. and Urry, J., (2000), 'Bodies of nature: introduction', *Body and Society*, 6, p1-II
- Madanipour, A. (2003). *Social Exclusion and Space. The City Reader*. R. LeGates and F. Stout. London, Routledge: 181-188.
- Madanipour, A. (2006). "Roles and challenges of urban design." *Journal of Urban Design* 11(2): 173-193.
- Madanipour, A. (2007). *Designing the City of Reason: Foundation and frameworks*. London and New York, Routledge.
- Madanipour, A., Ed. (2010). *Whose Public Space: International case studies in urban design and development*. London, Routledge.
- Madge, C., (1997), *Public Parks and the Geography of Fear*, Volume 88, issue 3, pp 237-250
- Mahdi, M., (1983), *Landscaping in the Arab World*, Libya: Arab House Book (Arabic)
- Makki, M., (1987), *Distribution of Public Parks in Medina*, Al-Darah, 192-207 (Arabic)
- Malecki, E. & Ewers, M., (2007), *Labour Migration to World Cities: with a Research Agenda for the Arab Gulf*, *Progress in Human Geography*, 467–484
- Maller, C., Townsend, M., Brown, P. and St Leger, L., (2002), *Healthy Parks Healthy People, The Health Benefits of Contact with Nature in a Park Context*, Melbourne, Deakin University
- Maller, C., Townsend, M., Pryor, A., Brown, P. & St Leger, L., (2005), *Healthy nature health people:*

- 'contact with nature' as an upstream health promotion intervention for populations, *Health Promotion International*, 21(1), 45e54
- Mandeli, K., (2010), *Public Spaces within Modern Residential Areas in Jeddah, Whose Public Space? International Case Studies in Urban Design and Development*, A. Madanipour, Abingdon, Routledge
- Mandeli, K.N., (2010), Promoting public space governance in Jeddah, Saudi Arabia, *Journal of Environmental Planning and Management*, 443-455
- Mandeli, K.N., (2011), *Public Spaces in a Contemporary Urban Environment: Multi-dimensional Urban Design Approach for Saudi Cities*, University of Newcastle upon Tyne, School of Architecture, Planning and Landscape, Global Urban Research Unit (GURU) Ph.D.
- Manzo, L., (2005), For Better or Worse: Exploring Multiple Dimensions of Place Meaning, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 25, pp. 67-86
- Manzo, L.C. & Perkins, D.D., (2006), Finding common ground: The importance of place attachment to community participation and planning, *Journal of Planning Literature*, 20, 335-350
- Manzo, L.C., (2003), Beyond house and haven: Toward a revisioning of emotional relationships with places, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 23, 47-61
- Marcus, C.C. and Francis, C., Eds., (1998), *People Places: Design Guidelines for Urban Open Space: Design guidelines for urban open space Canada*, John Willey & Sons, Inc.
- Martin, C.A., Warren, P.S. and Kinzig, A.P., (2004), Neighbourhood socioeconomic status is a useful predictor of perennial landscape vegetation in residential neighbourhoods and embedded small parks of Phoenix, AZ. *Landscape Urban Plan*, 69, 355-368
- Mason, J., (2002), *Qualitative Researching*, second edition, Sage Publications, London
- Mattson, R.H., (1992), 'Prescribing health benefits through horticultural activities', in Relf, D., (ed), *The Role of Horticulture in Human Well-Being and Social Development: A National Symposium*, Timber Press, Portland, Oregon pp. 161 - 168.
- Mazumdar, S. & Mazumdar, S., (1993), Sacred space and place attachment, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 13, 231-242
- Mazumdar, S. & Mazumdar, S., (2004), Religion and Place Attachment: A Study of Sacred Places, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, 385-397
- McCool, S.F. and Martin, S.R., (1994), Community attachment and attitudes toward tourism development, *J. Travel Res.*, 22(3): 29-34
- McNamara, C., (1999), Ph.D. *General Guidelines for Conducting Interviews*, Minnesota
- Merom, D, Bauman, A.E., Vita, P. and Close, G., (2003), An environmental intervention to promote walking and cycling-the impact of a newly constructed rail trail in Western Sydney, *Preventive Medicine* 36, 235-242
- Michelson, W., (1976), *Man and his urban environment: A sociological approach, with revisions*, Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley
- Milligan, C., Gatrell, A. and Bingley, A., (2004), 'Cultivating health: therapeutic landscapes and older people in northern England', *Social Science & Medicine*, 58, p1781-1793

- Mitchell, D., (2003), *The Right to the City: Social justice and the fight for public space* New York, Guildford
- Montgomery, S. (1986). "Planning & urban change in Saudi Arabia." *Journal of Environmental Planning and Management* 29(2): 74-79.
- Moore, E., (1981), 'A prison environment's effect on health care service demands', *Journal of Environmental Systems*, 11, p17-34
- Moore, R.L. & Graefe, A.R., (1994), Attachments to recreation settings: the case of railtrail users, *Leisure Sciences*, 16, 17-31
- Morris, N., (2003), Health, Well-Being and Open Space Literature Review, [Online] Available at: http://www.openspace.eca.ac.uk/pdf/appendixf/OPENspacewebsite_APPENDIX_F_resource_31.pdf [Accessed 24 April 2014].
- Morse, J.M., (1994), Designing Funded Qualitative Research, In N. K. Denzin & Y. S. Lincoln (Eds.), *Handbook of Qualitative Research* (pp. 220-235), Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage
- Mortada, H. (2003). *Traditional Islamic Principles of Built Environment*. London, Rutledge Curzon.
- Motteur, A., (2005), 'Al Baya'a Roundabout - where you sit and history at the same table', *The Middle East*, 15 August, p.17. available at : <http://www.aawsat.com/details.asp?section=43&article=317777&issueno=9757#.U0y6CY01hdg> [Accessed Friday November 2012].
- Nagy, S., (2006), Making Room for Migrants, Making Sense of Difference: Spatial and Ideological Expressions of Social Diversity in Urban Qatar, *Urban Studies*, 119-137
- Nahass, M., (1986), An Analysis of the Need for Public Recreation Facilities in the City of Jeddah, Saudi Arabia unpublished Plan Paper Submitted to the Dept. of Recreation Park and Leisure Studies, Jeddah, p. 34
- Nasar, J.L., (1998), *The evaluative image of the city*, Thousand Oaks: Sage
- Neisser, U., (1994), "Multiple Systems: A New Approach to Cognitive Theory", *European Journal of Cognitive Psychology*, vol. 6, no. 3, p. 225- 241
- Newton, J., (2007), "Structures, Regimes and Wellbeing", WeD Working Paper 30, University of Bath
- Nielsen, T. and Hansen, K., (2007), 'Do green areas affect health? Results from a Danish survey on the use of green areas and health indicators', *Health & Place*, 13, p839-850
- Nooraddin, H., (1988), "Al-fina', In-between Spaces as an Urban Design Concept: Making Public and Private Places along Streets in Islamic Cities of the Middle East," *Urban Design International* 3.1-2 (1998): 65-77
- Norberg-Schultz, C., (1979), *Genius loci., Towards a phenomenology of architecture*, New York: Rizzoli, Scannell, L., & Gifford, R. (2010), *Defining place attachment: A tripartite organizing framework*
- Norberg-Schultz, C., (1980), *Genius loci: Towards a phenomenology of architecture*, London: Academy Editions
- Nordha, H., Hartig, T., Hagerhalla, C. & Fry, G., (2009), Components of small urban parks that

predict the possibility, *Urban Forestry & Urban Greening* 8, 225–235

-Norman, D.A., (1999), "Affordance, conventions, and design", *Interactions*, vol. 6, no. 3, pp. 38-43

-O'Brien, E., (2006a), 'A question of value: what do trees and forests mean to people in Vermont?' *Landscape Research*, 31, 3, p257-275

-O'Brien, E., (2006b), 'Social housing and green space: a case study in inner London', *Forestry*, 79, 5, p535 -551

-O'Brien, L. and Tabbush, P., (2005), *Accessibility and Natural Spaces: Addressing Crime and Safety Issues*, Report of a Seminar Organised by Forest Research

Supported by Lancashire Constabulary, Cabe Space and English Nature, Norwich: HMSO

-Onwuegbuzie, A. and Leech, N., (2007), 'A Call for Qualitative Power Analyses', *Quality & Quantity*, 41, p 105-121

-Orum A & Neal Z, eds., (2010), *Common Ground? Readings and Reflections on Public Space*, New York: Routledge

-Ottosson, J. and Grahn, P., (2005), 'A comparison of leisure time Spent in a garden with leisure time spent indoors: On measures of restoration in residents geriatric care', *Landscape Research*, 30, 1, p23-55

-Owen, N., Humpel, N., Leslie, E., Bauman, A. & Sallis, J.F., (2004), *Understanding environmental influences on walking: review and research agenda*, *American Journal of Preventive Medicine*, 27(1), 67-66 *Sport and Recreation New Zealand (SPARC)*, 2008, Active NZ Survey

-Ozguner, H. and Kendle, A., (2006), 'Public attitudes towards naturalistic versus designed landscapes in the city of Sheffield (UK)', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 74, p139-157

Pacione, M., (2003), 'Urban environmental quality and human wellbeing - a social geographical perspective', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 65, p19-30

-Parr, H., (2007), *Mental health, nature work and social inclusion*, *Environment and Planning D: Society and Space*, 25(3), 537-561

-Patmore, J.A., (1983), *Recreation and Conservation Themes in Applied Geography* (England: School of Geography & Earth, University of Hull), p. 37

-Patterson, M.E. & Williams, D.R., (2005), *Maintaining research traditions on place: Diversity of thought and scientific progress*, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 25, 361–380

-Payne, L., Mowen, A. and Orsega-Smith, E., (2002), 'An examination of park preferences and behaviours among urban residents', *Leisure Sciences*, 24, p181-198

-Pigram, J., (1983), *Outdoor Recreation and Resource Management*, (New York: St Martin's Press, Inc.)

-Pile, S., (1990), *The Private Farmer: Transformation and Legitimation in Advanced Capitalist Agriculture*, Aldershot: Sage

-Possick, C., (2004), *Locating and relocating oneself as a Jewish Settler on the West Bank: Ideological squatting and eviction*, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, 53–69

-Powell, M and Rishbeth, C., (2012), *Walking Voices: flexibility in place and meanings of place by first generation migrants*, *Tijdschrift voor Economische en Sociale Geografie*, Vol 103/1, pp.69-84

- Prentice, D.A. & Miller, D.T., (1992), When small effects are impressive, *Psychological Bulletin*, 112(1) 160-164
- Pretty, G.H., Chipuer, H.M. & Bramston, P., (2003), Sense of place among adolescents and adults in two rural Australian towns: The discriminating features of place attachment, sense of community and place dependence in relation to place identity, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 23, 273–287
- Pretty, J., Griffin, M., Sellens, M. and Pretty, C., (2003), *Green Exercise: Complementary Roles of Nature, Exercise and Diet in Physical and Emotional Well Being and Implications for public Policy*, CES Occasional Paper 2003-1, Essex: University of Essex
- Pretty, J., Peacock, J., Sellens, M. and Griffin, M., (2005), 'The mental and physical health outcomes of green exercise', *International Journal of Environmental Health Research*, 15. 5 p319-337
- Price, L. & Matthews, B., (2013), Travel time as quality time: parental attitudes to long distance travel with young children, *Journal of Transport Geography* (32) 49–55
- Proshansky, H.M., (1978), The city and self-identity, *Environment and Behaviour*, 10, 147–169
- Proshansky, H.M., Fabian, A.K. and Kaminoff, R., (1983), Place identity: Physical world socialization of the self, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 3, 57–83
- Punter, J. (2007). "Developing Design as Public Policy: Best practice principles for design review and development." *Journal of Urban design* 12(2): 167-202.
- Punter, J., Ed. (2010). *Urban Design and the British Urban Renaissance*. London & New York, Routledge.
- Rakodi, C., (2001), "Forget planning, put politics first? Priorities for urban management in developing countries," UK: *JAG* 3: 209-223
- Relph, E., (1976), *Place and placelessness*, London: Pion Limited
- Relph, E. (1989). *The Modern Urban Landscape*. Baltimore, Maryland, The Johns Hopkins University Press.
- Ricks, G., (1992), *Landscape plant manual for Saudi Arabia*, Jeddah: King Abdullaziz University
- Riemer, J.W., (2004), Job relocation, sources of stress, and sense of home, *Community, Work & Family*, 2, 205–217
- Rishbeth, C. & Finney, N., (2006), Novelty and Nostalgia in Urban Greenspace: Refugee Perspectives, *Tijdschrift voor Economische en Sociale Geografie*, 97(3), 281–295
- Rishbeth, C., (2001), Ethnic minority groups and the design of public open space: an inclusive landscape? *Landscape Research* 26 (4): 351-366
- Rishbeth, C., (2006), Rwanda in Sheffield; the local/global distinctiveness of green space, in: McDonald, S. and Symonds, J. (Eds), *Materializing Sheffield: Place, Culture, Identity*
- Rishbeth, C., (2013), Articulating Transnational Attachments through On-site Narratives, In Manzo, L. And Devine-Wright, P. (Eds), *Place Attachment: Advances in Theory, Methods and Applications*, Routledge
- RMNO, (2004), *Nature and Health: The Influence of Nature on Social, Psychological and Physical Wellbeing*, The Hague: Health Council of the Netherlands
- Rohde, C. and Kendle, A., (1997), 'Nature for people', in Kendle, A. and Forbes, S. (ed) *Urban*

- Nature Conservation - Landscape Management in the Urban Countryside*, London: E & F Spon
- Rosenthal, R., (1991), *Meta-analytic procedures for social research*, Newbury Park, CA: Sage
- Rowles, G.D., (1990), Place attachment among the small town elderly, *Journal of Rural Community Psychology*, 11, 103–120
- Rubin, H. J. and I. S. Rubin, Eds., (1995), *Qualitative Interviewing: The Art of Hearing Data*, London, Sage
- Ryan, R.L., (2005), Exploring the effects of environmental experience on attachment to urban natural areas, *Environment and Behavior*, 37(1), 3-42
- Salahuddin, M., (2004, December 22), Asharq Al Awsat, Retrieved December 11, 2014, from Asharq Al Awsat: <http://classic.aawsat.com/details.asp?article=272676&issueno=9521#.VInMVyuUeSp> (Arabic)
- Sallis J.F. and Owen N., (2002), Ecological models of health behaviour, in: Glanz K., Rimer B.K., Lewis F.M., (2002), *Health Behaviour and Health Education: Theory, Research, and Practice*, 3rd ed., Jossey-Bass; San Francisco, CA pp. 462–484
- Sampson, R. & Groves, W., (1989), Community Structure and Crime: Testing Social Disorganization Theory, *American Journal of Sociology*, 94: 774-802
- Sampson, R.J., (1988), Local friendship ties and community attachment in mass society: A multilevel systemic model, *American Sociological Review*, 53, 766-779
- Sandercock, L., (2003), Out of the Closet: The Importance of Stories and Storytelling in Planning Practice, *Planning, Theory and Practice*, 4(1), 11-28
- Sanesi, G. and Chiarello, F., (2006), 'Residents and urban green spaces: The case of Bari', *Urban Forestry & Urban Greening*, 4, p125-134
- Scannell, L. & Gifford, R., (2010), Defining Place Attachment: A Tripartite Organizing Framework, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 30, p1–10
- Schreyer, R., Jacob, G. & White, R., (1981), Environmental meaning as a determinant of spatial behaviour in recreation, In J. Frazier & B. Epstein (eds.), *Proceedings of the Applied Geography Conferences*, 4, 294-300
- Scopelliti, M. & Giuliani, M.V., (2004), Choosing restorative environments across the lifespan: A matter of place experience, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 24, 423-437
- Scottish Natural Heritage, (2002), 'The health, social, economic and environmental benefits of open-air recreation', Scottish National Heritage, [Online] Available at <http://www.snh.org.uk/pdfs/access/rs-spbm.pdf> [Accessed 10 July 2014].
- Seamon, D., (1980), Body-subject, time-space routines, and place-ballets, In A. Buttner, & D. Seamon (Eds.), *The human experience of space and place* (pp. 148-165), New York: Martin's Press
- Seeland, K., (1999), Periurbane Natur im Spiegel zukünftiger Nutzungsbedürfnisse, *Biosphärenpark Ballungsraum*, Eidgenössische Forschungsanstalt für Wald, Schnee und Landschaft (WSL), WSL, Birmensdorf, pp. 7–11
- Shamai, S., (1991), Sense of place: An empirical measurement, *Geoforum*, 22, 347-358
- Shamai, S. & Ilatov, Z., (2005), Measuring sense of place: Methodological aspects, *Tijdschrift voor*

Economische en Sociale Geografie, 96, 467–476

- Shaw, S., (2001), Conceptualizing resistance: women's leisure as political practice, *Journal of Leisure Research* 33, 186–201
- Sidky, T. & Bastawisi, A., (2010), Planning and Treatment of Urban Spaces within the Layout of Urban Expansion of the City, First Arab Housing Conference - Construction Sustainability in the Arab Region, Especially the Desert Environment (pp. 110-145), Cairo: National Centre for Housing and Construction Studies (Arabic)
- Silverman, D., (2000), *Doing Qualitative Research: A Practical Handbook*, London: Sage
- Silverman, D., (2002), *Interpreting Qualitative Data: Methods for Analysing Talk, Text and Interaction*, London: SAGE Publication
- Slee, B., Curry, N. and Joseph, D., (2001), Social Exclusion in the Countryside Leisure in the United Kingdom: The role of the Countryside in Addressing Social Inclusion, A Report for the Countryside Recreation Network, The Countryside Recreation Network
- Smalles, P.J., (2006), Redefining the local: The social organisation of rural spaces in South Australia, 1982-2006, *Geography, Population and Environmental Management*, Flinders University, Adelaide
- Smith, T.W., Axon, C.J. and Darton, R.C., (2013), The impact on human health of car-related air pollution in the UK, 1995-2005, *Atmos. Environ.*, 77, 260-266
- Sport and Recreation New Zealand (SPARC), (2008), *Sport and Recreation Profile: Walking, Findings from the 2007/08 Active New Zealand Survey*
- Stake, R., (1995), *The Art of Case Research*, Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications
- Stedman, R.C., (2002), Toward social psychology of place, Predicting behavior from place-based cognitions, attitude, and identity, *Environment and Behavior*, 34, 561–581
- Stedman, R.C., (2003), Is it really just a social construction? The contribution of the physical environment to sense of place, *Society and Natural Resources*, 16, 671–685
- Stedman, R.C., (2006), Understanding place attachment among second home owners, *The American Behavioral Scientist*, 187-205
- Stokols, D. & Shumaker, S.A., (1981), People and places: A transactional view of settings, In J. Harvey (Ed.), *Cognition, social behavior, and the environment* (pp. 441-488), Hillsdale, N.J.: Erlbaum
- Stokols, D., (1995), "The paradox of environmental psychology", *American Psychologist*, vol. 50, no. 10, pp. 821- 837
- Straker, A. and Gelder, U., (2002), *I Just Call it the Woods: A Research Report Commissioned by the Small Woods Association to Explore Attitudes and Access to Woods and Woodland Products*, - Shropshire: Small Woods Association
- Sullivan, W., Kuo, F. and DePooter, S., (2004), 'The fruit of urban nature: vital neighbourhood spaces', *Environment and Behaviour*, 36, 5, p678-700
- Tankel, S., (1963), The Importance of Open Space in the Urban Pattern, In L. Wing (Ed.), *Cities and Spaces: The Future Use of Urban Spaces*, Baltimore Hopkins
- Tennessee, C. & Cimprich, B., (1995), 'Views to nature: effects on attention', *Journal of*

Environmental Psychology, 15, p77-85

- Thomas, D.R., (2003), "A General Inductive Approach for Qualitative Data Analysis", University of Auckland [Online], 14 May <http://www.health.auckland.ac.nz/hrmas/resources/Inductive2003.pdf> [Accessed 14 May 2011].
- Thompson Coon, J., Boddy, K., Stein, K., Whear, R., Barton, J. & Depledge, M.H., (2011), Does participating in physical activity in outdoor natural environments have a greater effect on physical and mental wellbeing than physical activity indoors? A systematic review, *Environmental Science & - Technology*, 45, 1761-1772
- Thompson, S., (2008), 'Design for Open Space Factsheet', Your Development
- Tinsley, H. and Croskeys, C., (2002), 'Park usage, social milieu, and psychosocial benefits of park use reported by older urban park users from four ethnic groups', *Leisure Sciences*, 24, p199-218
- Trancik, R. (1986). *Finding Lost Space: Theories of urban design*. New York Van Nostrand Reinhold
- Tuan, Y.F., (1975), *Place: An experiential perspective*, *Geographical Review*, 151-165
- Tuan, Y.F., (1977), *Space and place: The perspective of experience*, Minnesota: The University of Minnesota Press
- Tuan, Y.F., (1980), *Topophilia: A study of environmental perception, attitudes, and values*, Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall
- Twigger-Ross, C.L. & Uzzell, D., (1996), *Place and identity processes*, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 16, 205–220
- Tyrvaainen, L., Makinen, K. and Schipperijn, J., (2007), 'Tools for mapping social values of urban woodlands and other green areas', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 79, 1, p5-19
- Ulrich, R., (1984), 'View from a window may influence recovery from surgery', *Science*, 224, p 420-21
- Ulrich, R., Simons, R., Losito, B., Fiorito, E., Miles, M. and Zelson, M., (1991), *Stress recovery during exposure to natural and urban environments*', *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 11. p231-248
- Ulrich, R.S. and Parsons, R., (1992), 'Influences of passive experiences with plants on individual well-being and health', in Relf, D. (ed) *The Role of Horticulture in Human Well-being and Social Development*, Timber Press, Portland, Oregon pp. 93 - 105
- United Nations, (1985), *Human Rights: A compilation of International Instruments of the United Nations*, United Nations, (New York, MacMillan Publishing Co.), pp. 96-98
- Uzzell, D., (2002), "Place identification, social cohesion, and environmental sustainability", *Environment and Behavior*, vol. 34, no. 1, pp. 26-28
- Valentine, G., (2004), *Public Space and the Culture of Childhood*, Hants: Ashgate
- Valentine, G., (2008), *Living with difference: Reflections on geographies of encounter*, *Progress in Human Geography*, 32(3), 323-337
- Van Herzele, A. and Wiedemann, T., (2003), *A monitoring tool for the provision of accessible and attractive urban green spaces*, *Landscape Urban Plan*, 63, 109–126
- Vaske, J.J. & Kobrin, K.C., (2001), *Place attachment and environmentally responsible behaviour*,

The Journal of Environmental Education, 32(4), 16-21

- Vojnovic, I., Jackson-Elmore, C., Holtrop, J. and Bruch, S., (2005), 'The renewed interest in urban form and public health: Promoting increased physical activity in Michigan', *Cities*, 23, 1, pl-17
- Vorkinn, M. & Riese, H., (2001), Environmental concern in a local context, The significance of place attachment, *Environment and Behavior*, 33, 249–263
- Wall, A., (1999), "Programming the Urban Surface," In Corner, J., *Recovering Landscape: Essays in Contemporary Landscape Architecture*, New York: Princeton Architectural Press, 1999, 232-249
- Ward Thompson, C., (2002), 'Urban open space in the 21st Century', *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 2, p59 -72
- Ward Thompson, C., Aspinall, P., Bell, S. and Findlay, C., (2005), "It gets you away from everyday life": Local woodlands and community use - what makes a difference?', *Landscape Research*, 30, 1, pl09 -146
- Ward Thompson, C., Aspinall, P., Bell, S., Findlay, C., Wherret, J. and Travlou, P., (2004), *Open Space and Social Inclusion: local woodland use in central Scotland* (Forestry Commission)
- Ward, R.A., La Gory, M. & Sherman, S.R., (1985), Neighborhood and network age concentration: Does age homogeneity matter? *Social Psychology Quarterly*, 48, 138-149
- Ward-Thompson, C., Roe, J., Aspinall, P., Mitchell, R., Clow, A. & Miller, D., (2012), More green space is linked to less stress in deprived communities, *Landscape and Urban Planning*, 221–229
- Watson, A.E., Niccoulucci, M.J. and Williams, D.R., (1994), The nature of conflict between hikers and recreational stock users in the John Muir Wilderness, *J. Leisure Res.* 26:372–385
- Wengraf, T., (2001), *Qualitative Research Interviewing: Semi-structured, Biographical and Narrative Method*, London Sage Publications
- Weuve, J., Kang, J., Manson, J., Breteler, M., Ware, J. and Grodstein, F., (2004), 'Physical activity, including walking and cognitive function in older women', *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 292, 1454-1461
- Whyte, W.H., (1980), *The Social Life of Small Urban Space*, Washington D.C., The Conservation Foundation
- Wiles, R., Crow, G., Charles, V. and Heath, S., (2006), 'Informed Consent and the Research Process: Following Rules or Striking Balances', *Sociological Research Online*, 12,2 (online) Available at www.socresonline.org.uk/12/2/wiles.html (Accessed 26th May 2012)
- William M. & Trochim K., (2006), "Research Methods Knowledge Base"
- Williams, D., (2013), "Beyond the Commodity Metaphor," Revisited Some Methodological Reflections on Place Attachment Research, In Manzo, L. and Devine-Wright, P. (Eds), *Place Attachment: Advances in Theory, Methods and Applications*, Routledge
- Williams, D.R. & McIntyre, N., (2001), Where heart and home reside: Changing constructions of place and identity, In: *Trends 2000: Shaping the Future* (September 17–20, 2000) (pp. 392–403), Lansing, MI: Michigan State University, Department of Park, Recreation and Tourism Resources
- Williams, D.R. & Roggenbuck, J.W., (1989), Measuring place attachment: Some preliminary results, In Paper presented at the session on Outdoor Planning and Management, NRPS Symposium on

Leisure Research, San Antonio, Texas

- Williams, D.R., Patterson, M.E., Roggenbuck, J.W. & Watson, A.E., (1992), Beyond the commodity metaphor: Examining emotional and symbolic attachment to place, *Leisure Sciences*, 14, 29-46
- Willig, C., (2001), *Introducing Qualitative Research in Psychology: Adventures in Theory and Method*, Buckingham, Open University Press
- Wilson, J.Q. & Kelling, G.L., (1982), Broken windows, *Atlantic Monthly*, 249, 29-38
- Wilson, M., (1998), 'Asking Questions', in Sapsford, R. and Jupp, V. (eds) *Data Collection and Analysis*, Sage: London
- Winkel, G., Saegert, S., Evans, G.W. & Uzzell, D., (2009), An ecological perspective on theory, methods, and analysis in environmental psychology: advances and challenges, *Journal of Environmental Psychology*, 29(3), 318–328
- Witten, K., Hiscock, R., Pearce, J. and Blakely, T., (2008), Neighbourhood Access to Open Spaces and Physical Activity of Residents: A National Study', *Preventative Medicine*
- Wolffe, K., (1950), *The Sociology of Georg Simmel*, Free Press, New York
- Woodcock, J., Banister, D., Edwards, P., Prentice, A. and Roberts, I., (2007), "Energy and Health 3 - Energy and transport", *The Lancet* 370(9592): 1078-1088
- Woolley, H., (2003), *Urban open spaces: London*, New York: Spon Press
- Yamani, M., (1996), *Feminism and Islam: Legal and literary perspectives*, Reading, UK, Ithaca Press
- Yamani, M., (2009), *Cradle of Islam: The Hijaz and the quest for identity in Saudi Arabia*, London, I.B. Tauris
- Yamni, M., (2000), *Changed Identities: The challenge of new generation in Saudi Arabia*, London, Royal Institute of International Affairs
- Yerkes, R. and Miranda, W., (1985), "Women outdoors: who are they?" *Parks and Recreation*. 20: 48-51
- Yin, R.K., (1994), *Case Study Research*, Thousand Oaks, London, Sage Publication
- Zajonc, R.B., (2001), Mere exposure: A gateway to the subliminal, *Current directions in psychological science*, 10(6) 224-228
- Zeisel, J., (1981), *Inquiry by Design: Tools for Environment-Behaviour Research*, Monterey, CA, Brook/Cole
- Zepf, M., (2000), "Dialectical Identity in Urban Public Spaces," *Landscape Design*, 40-

APPENDIXES

Questioner

PERSONAL INFORMATION

1- Age

18-29

30-44

45-60

60 years and over

2- Gender

Male

Female

3- Education

School

Undergraduate

Postgraduate

4- Job

Governmental

Private sector

own business

Other

5- Leaving with

Family

Friend

Other

6- Country of birth

If not Saudi-Length of stay

7- Nationality

- Questions related to today visit

What is the reason for visiting today?

Who you with?

How long have you been in here and how long you will stay?

- Questions related to the open space

How you find out about this place?

How often you come to this place?

Are there any any other places you visit?

What do you like and not like in this place?

Is this typical how you visit this place? or sometimes you Come with bigger - smaller group?

When you always visit tis place? Weekdays - weekend - celebration

- Questions related to behavior in open spaces

Do you think there are any rules or law affecting your use of tis place? (such as commercial activity, parking, setting areas and barbeque)

Do you think you can be yourself on this place?

Who else is using this place?

Have you ever observed any problem between different groups?

Dose this place have a different people from different nationalities and gender?

- Questions related to social interactions

Do you usually form social relations in open spaces?

Do you usually form social relation in this place?

In general, what would prevent/motivate you from forming social relations in open spaces?

In general, what would prevent/motivate you from forming social relations in this place?

What is your opinion about the social interactions in this place?

In your opinion, what is the best open space regarding forming social relations in Jeddah?

- Questions related to residential area

In which neigbourhood you live?

Are there any open spaces in your area?

Do you use it?

- Questions related to today visit

QUESTIONS	MAJORITY OF PARTICPANTS
What is the reason for visiting today?	Relaxation - Walking exercise - Monitor children while playing
Who you with?	With the family - alone
How long have you been in here and how long you will stay?	About an hour

- Questions related to the open space

QUESTIONS	MAJORITY OF PARTICPANTS
How you find out about this place?	Living nearby - Getting around by car
How often you come to this place?	Once or twice a week
Are there any any other places you visit?	Yes
What do you like and not like in this place?	Maintenance - Hygiene - Plants
Is this typical how you visit this place? or sometimes you Come with bigger - smaller group?	Yes, typical
When you always visit tis place? Weekdays - weekend - celebration	Weekdays - weekend

- Questions related to behavior in open spaces

QUESTIONS	MAJORITY OF PARTICPANTS
Do you think there are any rules or law affecting your use of tis place? (such as commercial activity, parking, setting areas and barbeque)	Commercial activity
Do you think you can be yourself on this place?	Yes
Who else is using this place?	Family members
Have you ever observed any problem between different groups?	No
Dose this place have a different people from different nationalities and gender?	Yes

- Questions related to social interactions

QUESTIONS	MAJORITY OF PARTICPANTS
Do you usually form social relations in open spaces?	Yes
Do you usually form social relation in this place?	Yes, but not always
In general, what would prevent/motivate you from forming social relations in open spaces?	The desire to relax - the fear of racism
In general, what would prevent/motivate you from forming social relations in this place?	The sense of belonging to the place - the presence of commercial activities
What is your opinion about the social interactions in this place?	Not enough
In your opinion, what is the best open space regarding forming social relations in Jeddah?	The Corniche - Al Balad Area

- Questions related to residential area

QUESTIONS	MAJORITY OF PARTICPANTS
In which neighbourod you live?	In this neighborhood
Are there any open spaces in your area?	yes
Do you use it?	Not always

Participants in the questioner

Interviews spreadsheet	Date	Nationality	Gender	Age	Length
Area					
Al Rowa plaza	14-Feb	Saudi	M3F5K5	42	NR
Al Rowa plaza	15-Feb	Saudi	M2F3K6	51	NR
Al Rowa plaza	29-Dec	Saudi	M	30+	17:42
Al Rowa plaza	29-Dec	Egypt	FKK	35+	9:53
Al Rowa plaza	29-Dec	Yaman	FFK	25+	6:23
Al Rowa plaza	1-Jan	Yaman	MM	60+	27:52:00
Al Rowa plaza	3-Jan	Egypt	FK6	42	NR
Al Rowa plaza	3-Jan	Saudi	F	47	NR
Al Rowa plaza	25-Dec	Egypt	M F F	40, 38, 71	16:34
Al Rowa plaza	25-Dec	Saudi	MM	25+	13:52
Al Rowa plaza	26-Dec	Philippine	MFK	35+	12:31
Al Rowa plaza	26-Dec	Saudi	2M2FK4	23 and 62	NR
Al Rowa plaza	8-Mar	Saudi	F	41	NR
Al Rowa plaza	8-Mar	Syria	F K2	38	NR
Al Rowa plaza	1-Mar	Lebanon	M1F4K	45+	14:00
Al Rowa plaza	1-Mar	Jordan	MFK	30+	11:25
Al Rowa plaza	1-Mar	Syria	M2F2K	35+	10:28
Al Aqsan plaza	1-Mar	Syria	FK	50+	13:42
Al Aqsan plaza	1-Mar	Lebanon	MMFK	40+	10:23
Al Aqsan plaza	6-Mar	Lebanon	MMK	40+	15:42
Al Aqsan plaza	6-Mar	Egypt	MFK	30+	14:45
Al Aqsan plaza	6-Mar	Yaman	M6	20+	6:32
Al Aqsan plaza	5-Apr	Saudi	M2F4K6	37	16:43
Al Aqsan plaza	5-Apr	Saudi	M1F3K4	53	17:52
Al Aqsan plaza	23-Feb	Saudi	B6	18	9:32
Al Aqsan plaza	23-Feb	Lebanon	MFK3	`	11:37
Al Aqsan plaza	27-Feb	Saudi	B4	16	NR
Al Aqsan plaza	27-Feb	Saudi	MM	37	11:25
Al Aqsan plaza	29-Feb	Saudi	K2F1	37	10:28
Al Aqsan plaza	29-Feb	Saudi	K4F1	27	13:42
Al Aqsan plaza	6-Mar	Saudi	B5	17	NR
Al Aqsan plaza	6-Mar	Egypt	MFK1	32	NR
Al Aqsan plaza	16-Mar	Egypt	MFFK	40+	8:01
Al Aqsan plaza	16-Mar	Egypt	FFK6	45+	10:31
Omar plaza	16-Mar	Sudan	MMFFK2	40+	7:15
Omar plaza	16-Mar	Syria	MFK4	60+	8:12
Omar plaza	16-Mar	Egypt	M6F5K12	45+	17:42
Omar plaza	20-Mar	Chad	M2F3	38	NR
Omar plaza	20-Mar	Egypt	MMM	35+	12:05
Omar plaza	20-Mar	US	M	35+	9:34
Omar plaza	20-Mar	Saudi	FF	50+	8:55
Omar plaza	25-Mar	Syria	FFFFF	45+	12:21
Omar plaza	25-Mar	UAE	M4	28	NR
Omar plaza	25-Mar	South Africa	M2F2	37	NR
Omar plaza	12-Dec	Saudi	M12	25+	9:41

Omar plaza	12-Dec	Syria	MK4	35+	8:37
Omar plaza	12-Dec	Saudi	MFFK	30+	9:22
Omar plaza	9-Dec	Sudan	F3M2	38	NR
Omar plaza	14-Dec	Egypt	M3F4	43	NR
Omar plaza	10-Feb	Saudi	MF	45 - 38	9:42
Omar plaza	10-Feb	Palestine	FFMM	47	15:27
Al balad plaza	10-Feb	Jordan	F4M3K3	27	17:43
Al balad plaza	12-Feb	Lebanon	M2F3K2	35	14:21
Al balad plaza	19-Dec	Saudi	MF	25+	14:00
Al balad plaza	19-Dec	Saudi	MK	40+	11:25
Al balad plaza	19-Dec	Palestine	F	20+	10:28
Al balad plaza	19-Dec	Saudi	MMM	20+	13:42
Al balad plaza	19-Dec	Chad	MFK3	60+	10:23
Al balad plaza	9-Mar	Saudi	F	30+	15:42
Al balad plaza	9-Mar	Saudi	M	20+	14:45
Al balad plaza	9-Mar	Jordan	M2F3K	35+	6:32
Al balad plaza	9-Mar	Syria	MF	35+	8:33
Al balad plaza	9-Mar	Saudi-US	F	35+	10:07
Al balad plaza	23-Feb	Lebanon	M2F2K	35+	19:24
Al balad plaza	23-Feb	Egypt	MFK	45+	7:25
Al balad plaza	2-Apr	Saudi	MFK2	48	15:43
Al balad plaza	11-Apr	Saudi	M2F3K3	39	NR
Al balad plaza	19-Apr	Saudi	M3	25	NR
Al balad plaza	19-Apr	Saudi	M6	53	9:51
Al Basateen plaza	19-Apr	Saudi	M7	61	NR
Al Basateen plaza	19-Apr	Saudi	M3F5K8	34	13:23
Al Basateen plaza	12-Apr	Saudi	M6	43	13:57
Al Basateen plaza	12-Apr	Saudi	M3F2K3	28	NR
Al Basateen plaza	22-Dec	Saudi	M	35+	NR
Al Basateen plaza	22-Dec	Saudi	FF	30+	NR
Al Basateen plaza	22-Dec	Philippine	M	30+	NR
Al Basateen plaza	22-Dec	Saudi	M	45+	NR
Al Basateen plaza	22-Dec	Lebanon	FM	38	NR
Al Basateen plaza	22-Dec	Saudi	M	27	NR
Al Basateen plaza	3-Jan	Palestine	M17F12	25+	14:37
Al Basateen plaza	15-Jan	Sudan	MMMM	50+	9:57

Al Basateen plaza	22-Jan	Jordan	MMM+	65+	11:52
Al Basateen plaza	3-Feb	Sudan	M12F9	42	NR
Al Basateen plaza	5-Feb	Saudi	FFFFKK	36 - 71	NR
Al Basateen plaza	7-Feb	Saudi	MFK3	47	NR